1. Ch 1
2. Ch 2
3. Ch 3
4. Ch 4
5. Ch 5
6. Ch 6
7. Ch 7
8. Ch 8
9. Ch 9
10. Ch 10
11. Ch 11
12. Ch 12
13. Ch 13
14. Ch 14
15. Ch 15
16. Ch 16
17. Ch 17
18. Ch 18
19. Epilogue
20. New story soon
21. New story
22. Coming Soon
23. New fluff
24. [New] short fic

Ch 1

Chapter 1

"You need a new babysitter mate. You've got to get out into the world and you can't do that if you have to stay home and watch the kid." Mino said in frustration. His best friend, Lalisa, who was practically a sister to him had the most boring, humdrum live that he had ever seen anyone live. And he had no idea why.

Lalisa was a beautiful-handsome girl, always had girls drooling , she was rich, had her freedom, she had a beautiful sweet four-year-old daughter, and she ran her own business. Lalisa pretty much had it all.

But all she ever did was work. Work, work, work that's all her life consisted of. she never spent any time with her kid; she barely spent time with her friends anymore. Hell, she didn't even have a nightly lay! Which made Mino wonder just when she'd last gotten laid.

Lalisa ignored Mino as she looked over the proposal for tomorrow's meeting. She hated this conversation, and it always came up. Why couldn't he just leave her alone to live her life the way she wanted too? There was nothing wrong with it. Lisa was a good provider for her daughter and that was her only thought to make the world better for her sweet princess. Her own personal needs came last.

"Mino, I've told you a million times, I don't have time."

Mino snorted at her. "Lisa, you have your own company for fucks' sake...make time."

Lalisa was about to retort when a little blonde-haired girl came skipping into the room. When she saw Mino, she ran over to him. "Uncle Mino!" She flew at his leg and held on with all her might squeezing him so he couldn't get away.

"Hey Niblet, how are you doing today?" Mino leaned down and pried her arms off from around his leg and then picked her up. He held her in his arms while he wiped away at the crumbs that were on her face.

She smiled at happily at him while trying to swat away his hand. "I okay. I ate lots and lots of cookies!" She exclaimed quite proud of herself.

Mino chuckled at her, God she was cute. Thank God she took after Lalisa and not her bitch of a dead mother. "Yes pet I can see that. How many did you have?" He asked.

She looked up at the ceiling then back at him. "I don't know but it was a lot." She held up for his appraisal an empty Chips Ahoy bag.

Mino took the bag and turned crossed eyes to Lalisa. "Geez Lisa, see..." he held the empty bag out shaking it, as the crumbs fell out of the bag and onto the rug. "...this is why you need a new babysitter. The Niblets gone and ate the whole bag!"

Lisa finally looked up from the proposal to see Mino holding her daughter and shaking cookie crumbs out on her $800 rug. "Hey...hey, watch the crumbs please, unless you want to vacuum."

Kathy looked from her daddy back to her favorite Uncle. "Is okay Uncle Mino, daddy said so."

"Oh she did, did she?" She shook her head; her little blonde curls bopping up and down.

"And will Daddy take care of you when your little belly starts to rumble." He placed his hand on her belly and shook it, making Kathy laugh. "Stop Uncle Mino, that tickles!"

"Okay Niblet..." He put her on the floor "...why don't you go clean up a little while I talk to Daddy some more."

"Otay." Just as quickly as she skipped into the room, she happily skipped out.

Mino brushed the crumbs off his shirt and sat down in front of Lisa,

staring at her and scolding her at the same time.

"I don't want to hear it Mino, she's fine."

"Yeah, until she dies from junk food poisoning."

Lalisa sighed and finally looked up. "Look what would you have me do! I tried to get a new babysitter, but they keep leaving. They all say the same thing, she's too wild and they can't control her."

Lisa sat back and ran her hands over her eyes. She honestly didn't know what to do anymore when it came to Kathy. She really wanted to do the right thing, she was her daughter, and she loved her to death. Lisa knew she didn't spend enough time with her and that was probably why she was so wild. But she had a business to run, a business that would one day be hers, a business that put food on the table and clothes on her back.

Mino felt for his friend he understood where he was coming from, but he also understood Kathy, and he knew a little something about wild young girls. He smirked, thinking of one in particular; talk about wild, that one could throw a wrench in anyone's well made plans.

Suddenly a light bulb went off in his head. She needed something to do, some kind of responsibility, lord knows her brother couldn't control her. She needed something to set her straight, plus she was really great with kids, he'd seen her playing with the ones on her block. They all looked up to her and respected her.

He looked at his friend who still had her nose in those damn papers. A poor little Kathy needed someone to help show her the way.

Yes, the more he thought about it the better it sounded. He stood up.

"Listen mate, I'm going to go say goodbye to Kathy, I got some business to take care of. I'll be back later tonight."

Lalisa barely heard him she was so wrapped up in looking over the documents for her important meeting tomorrow. She waved at him and mumbled something that sounded like sure.

Mino walked out of the library and down the hall to the bathroom, where Kathy was just finishing up washing her hands.

She smiled when she saw him. "We going to play a game now Uncle Mino?"

He got down on his knees and took her in his arms. "Fraid' not Niblet I have to go see someone about a job."

She pouted, "Oh okay."

"Maybe Daddy will play with you."

She lowered her eyes. "No Daddy's too busy. She told me so."

Mino's heart broke for her, she was so sweet and it just wasn't right that Lalisa wasn't spending time with her. Well, he hoped that his plan worked, if it did, things would be better for everyone.

He tweaked her nose, "Don't you worry about it. I'll be back later tonight with a new friend for you, someone who would love to play with you."

Her eyes lit up, "Really?"

"Really. Until then why don't you go to your room and watch a video."

"Okay" She jumped out of his arms waving good-bye to him as she trotted down the hall. "See you later Uncle Mino."

Mino watched her go with a smile. "I'll see you later pet."

Grabbing his coat he walked out the door sparing Lalisa only one more glance. Shaking his head at him he left the mansion. He checked his watch, 4:30pm; he had to get to Revello Drive before that asshole came home, because he definitely didn't want to see him.

***

He pulled up to the house and got out of his car and was

immediately hit with the loud music of Alice In Chains blaring out of the little house on Revello Drive.

Shaking his head but tapping his hand to the music as he walked, he made his way up to the door. He banged on in it several times, but the music was too loud and there was no way the occupants of the house would hear him.

Sighing he opened the door and stepped inside. He glanced in the living room to find it empty but could clearly see the speakers rattling and the numerous small objects that had vibrated off the table and on to the floor.

Smiling he walked down the hall and into the kitchen. He stood in the door and stopped in his tracks, a warm mischievous smile on his face.

There she was, his little wild thing, it was a nickname he gave her years ago when she was ten and he was hanging out with her older brother Riley, and it just stuck with her.

She was leaning against the counter flipping through a magazine. She still had on her catholic school uniform, which was so short that he could practically see her underwear. His eyes raked down her form, she had on white socks that went up and over her knees. Her form-fitting jacket sat on her waist and rode up slightly since she was leaning and he could see the Celtic tattoo that she had on her lower back. Her hair was up in two ponytails and her head was swaying back and forth to the music.

She was quite the attraction and Mino being just a man, couldn't help but stare at her perfect tight ass as it moved from side to side to the beat of the music.

"It's not nice to stare you know." She sweetly yelled over her shoulder.

Mino grinned and walked up to her he leaned down and kissed her on the cheek, swatting her ass in the process. "Then you shouldn't advertise it. Do you think you can lower the music!" He shouted at her.

She turned and smiled at him. "Old fart." She teased him as she walked into the living room and lowered the radio.

Coming back into the kitchen she jumped up on the counter right in front of him. She sat there looking at him innocently legs spread just slightly and her feet swinging.

Mino looked up at her and just shook his head; closing her legs he patted her knee. "Ladies, don't sit with their legs spread."

She leaned down and teased him. "You know I'm no lady Miny." She purred.

Mino had to shake himself from the desire that she so easily invoked, he was definitely not going there again. "Listen pet I got a job for you."

She peered at him speculatively. "What kind of job?"

"Don't look at me like that...Christ you got a dirty mind. This is a respectable job."

She laughed. "Respectable...and you want me for this job?"

"Listen you and I both know that you are not that big bad that you like everyone to believe, I know you...remember. And I know that you need some responsibility in your life, some structure."

He stood up and walked over to the counter, pouring himself a cup of coffee, getting angry the more he thought about her situation. "That waste of a oxygen brother of yours doesn't have the balls to do it himself, so it's clear that someone else has too."

"And that someone is you? Who the hell appointed you as my guardian!"

He turned around to her, his voice calmed and lowered as he spoke. "Look don't get your panties in a bunch, I love you, you know that. I just want what's best for you."

He walked over to her and took her hands in his, he leaned down and looked deep in her eyes. "Jennie you know you're like a sister

to me, you can't keep running around like a wild woman!"

"I go to school and do what I'm supposed to do you know." She whined.

"Yes you do and that's great, but this running around behind everyone's back sneaking out and going to clubs that you have no business even being in to begin with, at all hours of the night, has got to stop."

She pouted, "But I have fun there."

"Jennie, you can't go clubbing every night for the rest of your life! What the hell do you plan on doing when you graduate?"

"I don't know."

"See my point exactly, no structure, no sense of responsibility. Now I got a job for you that requires a lot of responsibility, and maybe you'll have fun doing it too."

"I don't know Mino, how is that supposed to help me for the future?"

"Well it won't exactly, but maybe you'll finally be able to see that having responsibilities isn't that bad of a thing, and maybe that will put you on the right path."

Jennie wasn't too sure about that, she actually liked her life the way it was. She enjoyed being able to do what she wanted and when she wanted to do it. But she loved Mino and she would do anything to please him.

"Alright what's the job?" She begrudgingly asked.

Mino beamed at her, "That's my girl and don't look so put out, you'll love it, it's a babysitting job."

"Babysitting?"

He turned around a grabbed his coat walking back to the counter he took a piece of paper out of his jacket and wrote down the address.

"Here's the address meet me there later tonight, around 9PM and I'll introduce you to everyone."

"Alright. I'll be there."

Mino kissed her on the forehead. "Great I'll see you there luv! And be careful tonight, wherever the hell you're going."

"Yeah I will."

Mino left the house very happy with the ways things went. And Jennie sat on the stool in the kitchen wondering what the hell she had gotten herself into.

Ch 2

Jennie had been standing outside now for 10 minutes knocking on the door and still no one answered. You would think that someone who could afford to live in a mansion this size would have helped to answer the door. She lifted her arm and went to knock again when the door was finally opened.

She smiled and looked at... nothing. Stupidly, she thought maybe the place was haunted until she heard a shy little voice speak.

"Hi, are you my new friend?"

Jennie looked down and into a pair of big soft brown eyes. She smiled warmly at the little girl and leaned down. "I don't know, I might be, I'm Jennie." She held out her hand.

The little girl took it and shook hands with her. "I'm Kathy. You're pretty." She said as she looked at Jennie in awe.

Jennie giggled, "Well, thank you Kathy, it's nice to meet you, may I come in?"

Kathy stepped aside as Jennie walked in looking around at the luxurious setting. "You have a beautiful home, Kathy."

Kathy closed the door. "It's not mine, it's my daddy's."

Jennie chuckled and leaned down to look the child in the eyes. "Oh, and Daddy doesn't like to share, eh?"

Lisa walked down the hall from the back of the house. She had been arguing with Mino about what he did when she heard someone at the door. Knowing that Kathy would answer it, even though she had told her numerous times not to, Lisa hurried out to see whomever it was, and what she saw stopped her.

There in her hallway was the most exquisite creature she had ever

seen and she could do nothing but stand there as her eyes soaked in every single delectable inch of her.

She had honey blonde hair that was up in a neat French twist showing a slim beautiful neck. She was wearing a hot-red slip dress that clung to every curve. As she leaned down to talk to Kathy the back of the dress rode up and skimmed very strong smooth thighs. The back of her dress was open, revealing a smooth supple back, all the way down to the curve of her buttocks, and there was a Celtic tattoo that dipped below the dress line teasing her as to where it ended.

Lisa was completely spellbound, unable to move as she just continued to soak in her sensuousness, and that little voice inside her head screamed...fuck her!

Kathy, finally noticing her standing there and ran over to her. "Look daddy Jennie's here!"

Jennie stood up straighten her dress and turned around to meet her new boss. The second she did she couldn't control the violent lust that consumed her.

Now Jennie always had a thing for older, in fact she never ever dated boys or girls that were her age. They were inexperienced and clumsy, whereas an older more mature knew how to pleasure a woman. And that was what she was all about, the pleasure.

So as she stood in this stranger's house staring at the most perfect woman she had ever seen, her body hummed with excitement, her toes curled in her shoes, and her breath hitched as her heart pounded furiously in her chest. She adjusted her stance to try and quench the ache that was slowly starting in between her legs.

Jennie eyes lazily ran down her tall strong frame, from the top of her dark brown hair to the broadest, strongest shoulders that she had ever seen. Her black silk shirt clung to a powerful, hard chest and her black slacks fit her snugly. Her head tilted to the left, just a little, to try to get a glimpse of her boss ass, because she knew it had to be perfect. She licked her lips...mmmm...definitely perfect, she had to have this woman.

Lisa just stood there watching her ogle and her body warmed. As her slacks grew tight, she cleared her throat, feeling slightly uncomfortable by the raw hunger she could see in her eyes. She felt like she was just stripped naked from head to foot and although she was not unaccustomed to that feeling, for some reason, coming from her it made Lisa feel...vulnerable, and she was not accustomed to that.

Finally tearing her gaze from Jennie. Lisa looked down at Kathy.

"What did you say princess?"

Kathy rolled her eyes sometimes her daddy was very dense. "I said this is Jennie, she's my new friend just like what Uncle Mino said."

Lisa looked back at the beautiful blonde as all her hopes for an intimate get together was washed away at her daughter's words. This was the new babysitter?

Jennie smiled brazenly at Lisa as she walked over to her.

Lisa just watched as she made her way, moving her hips from side to side, tempting her...calling out to her like a siren in a William Shakespeare play.

When Jennie was right in front of her, she held out her hand. No word or thought formed in her mind, her hand just moved out on its own accord.

Jennie grasped her hand and held on to it tightly her forefinger lightly moving across Lisa skin. When she spoke her voice was the sweetest honey that coated Lisa entire being and did nothing but make her think of fucking her...again.

Lisa shook her head trying to clear her thoughts. "I'm sorry what did you say?"

Jennie chuckled warmly at her, knowing full well the effect she was having, just where she wanted. "I said, it's nice to meet you, I'm Jennie Kim."

Lisa smiled back as her eyes continued to gaze into her. "Hi Jennie,

I'm Lisa...actually it's Lalisa, Lalisa Manoban, but everyone calls me Lisa."

"Mmm..." she purred, "...I like it, very nice."

Kathy stood between them looking back and forth from one to the other then down to their still clasped hands. She looked back at her daddy and was confused, she seemed...lost, like she had no idea what was going on, and that was nothing like her daddy, and it frightened her.

"Daddy?" She asked in a small shaky voice.

Jennie hearing the child's fear let go of Lisa's hand and leaned down to her. She tenderly touched her shoulder so Kathy would look at her. "So Kathy you're four years old right?"

Kathy turned now watery eyes to Jennie and shook her head yes.

Jennie smiled at her as Lisa just couldn't stop herself from staring at Jennie.

"Ah you're here luv." Mino came out of the back room and walked up to where the three of them stood in the hall.

His presence finally seemed to snap Lisa out of her haze and she turned to Mino who just walked right up to them and hugged Jennie, affectionately kissing her on the cheek. "Find the place alright then luv?"

Jennie smiled at him and kissed him back standing in his embrace. "Who could miss this place, it's huge." Quickly glancing at Lisa she mumbled, I hope that's not the only thing that's huge around here.

"What was that luv?" Mino asked peering at her like he knew damn well what she said.

Jennie just smiled and turned back to Mino. "I said I hope I don't get lost around here." Then she glanced at Lisa who was watching them like she was trying to figure out exactly what kind of relationship they had.

Kathy who was tired of being ignored jumped up and down. "She's my new friend, right Uncle Mino, the one you were talking about?" She hopefully asked. She liked Jennie and she was really pretty, plus it looked like her daddy liked her too, maybe she wants to play with her too, just like me Kathy thought.

Mino looked at Kathy and ruffled her hair. "She sure is Niblet."

"Oh good...I like her she seems really nice, right daddy?" She turned her eyes to her daddy who still was standing there like a zombie.

'Is she Mino's girlfriend? That was a very loving kiss and hug seemed a little too friendly for just friends. Why would Mino offer his girlfriend to be my new babysitter? God she's beautiful, and that body, so damn tight. I wonder what she tastes like. I wonder what a woman like her is doing babysitting for a living. And is she always going to be dressed like that?'

"Hello...anyone in there?" Mino stood in front of his friend waving his hand in front of her face. "Lalisa!"

"Ah what?" Lisa annoyingly said, she didn't like being disturbed from her inner musings.

Jennie giggled and Mino glared at her. "I said shall we go into the library I'm sure there are questions you want to ask Jennie before you hand over your daughter to her."

Mino said it a little gruffly even though he didn't mean too. But damn it the lust was thick enough in here to cut with a knife and this was not what he wanted. He should have known that Jennie would be attracted to Lisa, hell every woman was. But he didn't bring her into the house for this. Maybe this wasn't such a good idea.

Kathy grabbed Jennie's hand and started to drag her toward the library. "Come on Jennie I'll show you where it is."

Jennie let Kathy lead her to the library, making sure she added an extra swing in her step as she went.

Lisa, like an addicted drug addict, just watched her ass swinging back and forth as she walked away, and she swallowed hard.

***

Later That Night At The Club B...

Jennie was sitting at her table drinking her beer there was an almost evil smirk on her face, as her mind quickly and competently conspired to get that gorgeous in her bed.

Jennie almost balled over laughing when she remembered the shocked expression on Lisa's face when Mino came right out and told her that Jennie was only seventeen. It was a moment that she would never forget. It was also the moment that she realized that that was a big deal for Lisa, because her attitude changed. Lisa didn't look her in the eye anymore and she barely spoke more than two sentences to her. Just enough to begrudgingly say 'okay you're hired'.

Taking a drink of her beer she pondered her new job. Every day after school she was expected to go there and watch Kathy until bedtime, which Lisa said was usually around nine o'clock, nine-thirty. Lisa said she would pay her $150 a week.

Lisa briefly told her a little about them, that she was a widower and Carla her wife had died from Cancer about two years before and that Kathy didn't have many memories of her. That seemed like a touchy subject because she had said it so coldly and distantly, like she didn't really care that her wife had died. There was definitely more there than what they were telling her. Lisa also said that she owned a real estate firm that, according to Mino, she practically lived at, hence the need for a babysitter that could watch her all day.

After that Mino took over telling her that Lisa had a hard time keeping a babysitter because Kathy was a little wild and uncontrollable. Jennie had laughed; she couldn't help herself, because she finally understood why Mino suggested she take the job.

Who better to look after a young wild child then another young wild child? It was sound reasoning but she suspected that Lisa didn't know about her wildness because if she did she was sure that

Lisa would have put up more of a fight. Because she got the distinct impression that after finding out Jennie was only seventeen that she didn't want her to take the job.

But Kathy, God bless her, had pleaded and pleaded, saying that she liked Jennie and that she promised she would be good. So Lisa had reluctantly agreed saying they would try it out for a week and see how it worked.

When they walked her to the door, she had offered her hand once again. Lisa had just stood there staring at her hand like she was afraid to touch her. With a nudge from Kathy she finally did and when she did...

bang, i

t was like fireworks all over again.

They stood there staring at each other and holding each other's hands like they were the only people in the room. Lisa's eyes turned a few shades darker and she could easily see the lust staring back at her. But then suddenly the hunger she saw in her eyes disappeared and it was replaced with something that looked suspiciously like...fear.

"Hey it's the Jenster!" Alex said. He and Rosé approached the table from the dance floor and sat down next to their friend, who still hadn't realized that they were even there.

"Helloooo Jennie!" Alex looked from Jennie back to Rosé.

"She's got that look in her eye, Rosé" Alex said as he looked around the Club. "Okay, who's the intended victim for the evening?"

Rosé looked around too and didn't notice anyone new or different that would invoke such spaciness from her friend. "I don't know, but whoever it is, it doesn't look good for him."

Jennie finally heard them and she laughed. "You guys always think the worst of me," she said then took a drink of her beer.

"Well that's because we know you and we know what that look

means." Rosé said.

"Oh yeah and what's that?"

"That some poor unsuspecting soul has no idea that he's on the menu." Alex said while exchanging worried glances with Rosé.

They knew their friend and they knew what she liked...older men. It was something that they both didn't like, they were worried about her and they didn't want her getting hurt by some bad guy who was just going to fuck her and leave her.

"You guys worry too much. Besides there's nothing wrong with a little after school activities." She sweetly said.

Suddenly she stood up. "You know I think I'm going to head home, I got a big day tomorrow."

Alex looked at his watch. "Jen it's only eleven o'clock?" Jennie never went home that earlier, something was definitely up.

"Oh...oh well I guess I'm just tired, I'll see you guys tomorrow."

Alex and Rosé watched her go.

"Yup...poor soul." Alex said shaking his head.

***

"She was really nice don't you think so daddy?" Kathy asked as Lisa tucked her in.

She most certainly was in more ways than one.

"Yes she was very nice. Kathy it's late you have to go to sleep now."

Kathy yawned. "I can't wait to play with her tomorrow daddy." She said as her eyes started to close.

Me too

.

"I know sweetie." she kissed her on the forehead. "Good night baby."

"Good night daddy."

Lisa got up and walked out closing the door behind her. She leaned against it and closed her eyes...

'what the hell was I thinking? I had to stop this, she was only seventeen for Christ's sake and I was twenty-nine! Hello! can you say jailbait!'

Shit she could go to jail for just thinking the crap that she was thinking.

Oh God but those eyes, those eyes that had so thoroughly staked out their claim on her. She knew that look; it was a come-hither look. It was a look that whispered of all the wicked carnal delights she could find in her body. It was a look that said

'take me please...now!'

Lisa straightened away from the door once again shaking her head clear and started to walk toward her room. A cold shower, that's what she needed, a long cold shower, and a good night's sleep and things would look better in the morning.

Lisa knew this wasn't going to work, she wanted her to much, the temptation was too great and Lisa knew that she couldn't have her. Well, she'd give it a week. Maybe if she stayed away, it wouldn't be so bad. She snorted, yeah right, she just met her and already she couldn't stop thinking about her. Jennie was too perfect. She was her most inner erotic fantasy come to life.

Everything about Jennie turned her on. Her body unconsciously shivered as Jennie image swam through her mind and she could hear her soft raspy voice whispering in her ear of how she couldn't wait to taste her. Lisa could almost feel her smooth skin gliding on top of her. Lisa could practically feel those strong thighs squeezing her waist as she rode her long and fast. That was easy to imagine considering the way her body moved when she walked like it was a beautiful song being played just for her. Even her dainty little hand and the way it fit so perfectly into her, turned her on

And her scent...God Lisa couldn't get her smell out of her nose! It was the perfect combination of vanilla and sunshine. It was like Jennie was there in her room...waiting for her laying seductively on her bed in nothing but one of her shirts, her hands grazing her long strong legs, beckoning her to come to bed and play with her...

stop...bad thoughts...jailbait!

Walking into the bathroom Lisa turned on the cold water...all the way up, and she prayed to God that she could keep her hands off Jennie's hot little body.

Ch 3

The Next Day....

Jennie, Alex and Rosé sat around the old oak tree in front of the school eating their lunch. They were unusually quiet, each one pondering something different.

Rosé was wondering whom Jennie seemed to be so obsessed with. There was no doubt in her mind that there had to be a 'someone', because Jennie had barely spoken all day. She had the most intense gleam in her eye. And Rosé would swear that while in sex-ed class she heard her either purring or moaning.

Meanwhile, Jennie could not get Lisa's image out of her mind. She had the most erotic dreams last night and Lisa had played the starring role in each of them. She had woken up so horny that she had to spend a little extra 'me' time in the shower, which her stupid brother did not appreciate, as he banged incessantly on the door for her to get out.

She didn't know what was wrong with her; she had lusted after other older women that were just as good-looking, and probably less hard head, than this one. But for some reason Lisa had attached herself to her soul and she couldn't shake her off.

As she bit into her peach and the juices trickled out of the corner of her mouth she imagined that it was '

her juices'

. She closed her eyes and savoured the juices in her mouth rolling her tongue around tasting every savoury drop, she instinctively moaned, as she felt the slight pulse that had lingered in her core all day grow stronger.

While the girls were lost in their own thoughts, Alex was sitting idly

by eating his bologna sandwich and wondering why he didn't get a chocolate pudding snack in his lunch anymore.

The silence of the beautiful spring day was interrupted by the sound of tires screeching to a stop and a door slamming shut.

"Ah Jen?" Alex said.

"Mmmm." Jennie said mindlessly, her eyes still closed and her thoughts centered on the gorgeous person standing in front of her, naked, as she slowly licked her way up her hard body, feeling her fingers run through her hair, tugging on her scalp and pulling her up against her chest, as her lips slowly descended to hers. Her tongue came out and licked her...

"Ow!" Her eyes popped open and landed on Alex, as she rubbed her arm from his hard slap. "What the hell Lex?"

Alex nodded toward the parking lot and the angry figure that was storming his way over to them.

Jennie turned to see who it was and rolled her eyes. She didn't need this now! Couldn't she just sit here and fantasize about her soon to be lover? Why did he have to show up and ruin her daydreaming! God he was such a putz, always showing up at the wrong time.

He stood in front of her with his hands on his hips as his light blue eyes looked down at her furiously.

"Didn't I tell you not to take my car last night?" Riley shouted at his sister.

Jennie relaxed and leaned back against the tree, taking another bite of her peach and then daintily dabbing at the corners of her mouth. She rolled her eyes at her older brother, unfazed by his show of anger. She shrugged, "I was home early."

"That's not the point Jennie! You know I had to go to work last night! Do you know what it looked like when I pulled up to the army base on my kid sister's ten speed?"

"Like an under aged mutant GI Joe?" Alex asked wide-eyed as Rosé

and Jennie giggled.

Riley glared at the teenager as his face turned even redder, if that was possible. He hated his sister's friends; in fact he was almost at the point where he hated her. They showed him no respect! He was just a tool for their jokes and sarcasm!

He turned back to his unruly sister, where the hell did he go wrong with her? He knew that when his parents died things would be difficult but he never thought it would be this bad. Since day one she had never listened to him, instead choosing to do her own thing and go her own way. Which he didn't mind too much at the time, he had been only 22 when their folks died and Jennie was 10. He was a young man in his early adulthood. He should've been out dating and getting drunk, going to college. But instead he was forced to take care of her.

So when she started to take care of herself, he didn't mind so much. But then when he found out about what happened with his best friend Mino, he had finally realized that he had made a mistake in letting her do that. Now it was too late, she didn't listen to him, and she probably never would.

"Relax Ri, you got your car back and I didn't hit anything...this time." She smiled at him.

Riley didn't know what to do. Standing there his fists clenched at his side, his face red as a fire truck, his mind in total disarray as to the quandary he found himself in.

"I think the whistles about to blow." Alex whispered, as he watched Riley's face turn redder and redder, and the stupid look of 'what the hell do I do' just continued to play over and over across his face.

Jennie sighed and stood up. She gently took Riley by the arm and steered him back to his car. She petted his arm calmingly and spoke softly to him. "Riley you should go home and rest you have to be at the base by 7PM, and you don't look too good. You know if you don't take your nap, you'll never be able to stay awake at your post. And you don't want to be reprimanded again by Major Walsh." She leaned in and whispered to him, "you know she doesn't like you

very much."

Riley just let her walk him to his car like a zombie. He knew that she was treating him like a little kid and he knew that he couldn't do anything about it. It was like she had this uncanny control over him and his senses, cause while he just wanted to strangle her; it was like his hands just wouldn't move.

She opened the door to his car and placed him inside, then closed the door.

Riley turned to look at her sweet and serene face and thought what a joke, she was anything but sweet and serene. She was the devil or a sorceress with magical powers over men, that was the only answer that his dim-witted mind could come up with. "DON'T take my car tonight Jennie or I swear I'll..."

She leaned down and patted him mockingly on the cheek "You'll what, scold me again?" She smiled brightly at him. "Go home and rest Riley you'll feel better when you wake up. And don't worry I won't take your car."

Riley searched her face for any sign of deceit and as usual, he couldn't find any. He started up his car and without saying another word drove off.

***

Checking her watch for the twentieth time Lisa tapped her pen anxiously on the desk. She had been sitting in this meeting all afternoon and she had absolutely no idea of what it was about.

Last night, Lisa knew what she was supposed to say and do, she knew what cockroach she had to step on to acquire her latest acquisition. But everything was a blur after Jennie walked in her door. Now all she could do was fantasize about the little nymph and sit here uncomfortably as her pants continued to get tighter and tighter.

she had shifted in her seat so many times already, that the people sitting around her eyeballed her nervously. They all noticed her

lack of interest in the meeting, and they were petrified. They knew their boss; she had a temper that would rival the devil herself and each person sat there wondering what they did wrong to piss him off. Little did they know that her agitation stemmed from a petite seventeen-year-old blonde who would not stop torturing her with visions of her erotic sex play.

Lisa rubbed her eyes;

God She so tired, she hadn't slept well.

Her dreams plagued her with images of passionate embraces, husky moans, and the sweet smell of sex...all night long. She would wake up sweating and her dick hard as a rock. She must have taken ten showers in a course of eight hours, and jacked off more times than when she was fifteen.

Lisa grumbled loudly and everyone turned their '

deer caught in the headlights'

eyes to her, but she paid them no mind as she stared out the window and again tried to figure out what the attraction was.

Yes, she was gorgeous, had a body that would make any man drool, and yes she had a voice that just oozed sex, but she was just a kid! There were plenty of women out there that were older more mature, more experienced, and that were just as beautiful. Besides what could a seventeen-year-old possibly know about giving and receiving pleasure, how experienced could she possibly be?

Her body hummed with excitement and her dick got harder as all the pleasurable ways that she could help her become more experienced played out in her mind.

"...the sale was late..." Jeffrey said.

"WHAT...JAILBAIT?" Lisa shockingly shouted, turning in her chair; just what the hell was this meeting about?

Jeffrey looked at Lisa like she had lost her mind, "Ah no Ma'am, I said...the sale was late."

"What?" Lisa looked at all the confused faces that were staring at her. When she finally got her bearings back, she cleared her throat and her eyes were hard slits. "I know that!" she snapped, "continue."

Jeffrey didn't stop to wonder what was going on she just continued speaking.

Holy shit she was losing her mind! She was jailbait and she was nothing but a pervert! What the hell was wrong with her? Jennie was untouchable...she was a big no-no...she was...

Suddenly Lisa eyebrow quirked up and her pen stopped tapping that was it...it was the seductive lure of something that was taboo; the enticing desire to touch her and take her and knowing that she couldn't, that she shouldn't. That had to be it! Lisa was obsessed only because Jennie was forbidden fruit.

Lisa smiled feeling somewhat at ease with her revelation.

"Excuse me, Ms. Manoban?" A timid voice said.

After a few seconds of silence, Jeffrey cleared his throat and spoke louder. "Ms. Manoban?"

Lisa turned and glared at him with annoyed dark brown eyes. "What?" She growled out.

"Will that b...be...all f...for today m... ma'am?" Jeffrey stammered out, uneasy under the hard angry glare of his boss.

Lisa looked around the room and saw all the scared faces staring at her like she was going to rip their heads off. She smiled at all of them and stood up, buttoning her jacket quickly before anyone noticed why she was so distracted.

"Yes thank you Jeff."

They all jumped up and scattered like foxes evading the hounds. In mere seconds she had managed to clear out a room that had just been occupied with twenty people.

Jeffrey cautiously approached her. "Shall I run the contract up to

Mr.Cruise to look over?"

"What time is it, Jeff?" Lisa asked as she walked out of the conference room heading toward her office.

Jeffrey quickly followed behind, haphazardly holding his papers and trying to keep his glasses from falling off his nose. As he looked at his watch a folder fell out of his hands, and papers scattered all over the floor. "Oh my...it's a 2:30 ma'am?' He dropped to his knees and quickly gathered all the papers together.

2:30! Shit she was going to be late... again. "I have to go pick up Kathy from daycare. I'll be back later."

Yes, he was definitely coming back to

work...work...work...work...no seducing

, no touching, no tasting...none of that...work...work...work.

Jeffrey still on the floor sputtered out. "Yess... ma'am, but ah... Ma'am, what about the contract?"

Lisa walked into the elevator and pressed the button for the parking lot. Instinctively she raked her hand through her hair, and straighten out her suit, she blew into her hand and smelled her breath, not liking what she smelled she took out a breath mint. All the while not once realizing what she was doing, her only thought was to pick up her daughter and see her torturer.

Ch 4

Jennie pulled up into the driveway and ran right over the metal garbage pail. Ignoring the crunch, the metal made as it kinked and the sure sound of metal scraping on paint, she cut the engine off. Looking in the rearview mirror she checked her makeup and hair, happy with what looked back at her, she opened the door and got out.

She kicked the door closed with her foot as she looked up at the house. Not caring in the least that she just dented the door and scraped the paint on the front spoiler of Riley's car, the same car that she promised she wouldn't take.

Reaching the front door, she knocked. When no one answered she checked her watch, it was 3:15PM, she was fifteen minutes late, but she couldn't help that. She had to go home first after school and wash up and change into her favourite pair of thongs and re-do her make up.

She kept her school outfit on because Jennie knew the seductive picture, she made wearing it, that irresistible X-rated mix of naughty and nice. And Jennie wanted to hit her with everything that she had.

After a few minutes no one answered the door, she sighed and wiped away at the sweat that formed on her forehead. She didn't know what the temperature was but it had to be at least ninety degrees. She put on her headphones and sat down on the bench trying to cool off in the shade of the overhang.

She looked down at her blouse and noticed that it was definitely not revealing enough cleavage. So she unbuttoned three more buttons, until the lace top of her jet-black bra could be seen. She pushed her breasts up and sat back comfortably crossing her ankles and swinging her legs. Not caring who heard her she started to sing out loud.

"Ah

What cha doing

Really

You know I'm coming over right

(now baby tell what you wanna do with me)

Now you got it hot for me already baby

Okay

I'll be there in about uh, give me ten minutes

Be ready

Ah

Wear that little thing I like"

Meanwhile a sleek black BMW pulled up the driveway and parked behind Jennie's or rather Riley's car. The front door opened, and Lisa stepped out and opened the back door.

"Do you think she's here yet daddy?" Kathy asked excitingly as she unbuckled her car seat.

Lisa glared at her and swatted her hands away; she wasn't supposed to be able to do that.

Lisa turned her gaze toward the old Citroen parked in her driveway that was still smoking. "Well, I guess that's her car."

God knows she didn't own a piece of shit like that.

Lisa helped Kathy out and they walked hand in hand up the walkway and to the front door.

"Oh I forgot teddy." Kathy said.

Lisa sighed, "Well go back and get him then come right inside."

"Okay" Kathy skipped back to the car as Lisa made her way to the front door. Lisa stopped... swallowing hard and fighting the urge to adjust her crotch.

Jennie sat there on the bench, her head was leaned back, and her eyes were closed. Her legs were parted slightly swinging back and forth as her fingers glided up and down her chest slowly.

Lisa stood there her eyes blackened with lust as they watched Jennie fingers move sensuously up and down over her skin. She could see tiny droplets of sweat glistening on Jennie's chest and Lisa licked her lips as her mouth dried.

"(Now baby tell what you wanna do with me)

It's seven o'clock

On the dot

I'm in my drop top

Cruisin' the streets - Oh yeah

I gotta real pretty, pretty little thang that's waiting for me

I pull up

Anticipating good love

Don' keep me waiting

I got plans to put my hands in places

I never seen girl you know what I mean"

Jennie voice was low and husky as she continued to sing some R&B song that she knew she had heard before, but Lisa couldn't think of anything except dropping to her knees and running her tongue in between the crevice of that sexy breasts.

"Let me take you to a place nice and quiet

There ain't no one there to interrupt

Ain't gotta rush

I just wanna take it nice and slow

(now baby tell me what you wanna do with me)

See I've been waiting for this for so long

We'll be makin' love until the sun comes up

Baby

I just wanna take it nice and slow

(now baby tell me what you wanna do with me)"

Lisa stood there soaking her in as the sultry words that come out of her full red lips encased her in a web of desire. Unable to move, unable to breathe, Lisa felt like her control was going to snap, as the devil on her shoulder prodded her to move closer, to spread those supple legs apart and submerge herself deep inside the perfection of her tight young body.

"Now here we are

Drivin' round town

Contemplating where I'm gonna lay you down

Girl you got me sayin'

My, my, my - My

I wish that I - I

Could pull over

And get this thing started right now

I wanna do something freaky to you baby

I don't think they heard me

I, I wanna do something freaky to you baby

So call out my name"

Unconsciously Lisa took a step closer, as the devil continued to speak to her in hushed tones urging her on...

'look at her, laying there open and ready for you, look at the way her breasts gently rise and fall with every note she sings, look at the way she wantonly displays her black bra underneath the pure almost virginal white blouse she wears, ha...she's no virgin, she's too forward, too sexy, she knows what she wants, she wants you...take her...take her now!'

"Hi Jennie!" An excited voice chirped, startling Lisa out of her lust haze, but not getting Jennie's attention, who had the iPod up too twenty.

Kathy's little brow furrowed when her new friend didn't say hi back to her, so she screamed with all her might, "HI Jennie!" which made her daddy shiver from the shrill high tone of her voice.

Jennie jumped up and ripped the iPod off as she noticed them standing there. She smiled sweetly at Kathy and stood up, adjusting her blouse, "Hi sweetie."

Then she looked at Lisa; slowly she walked closer and held out her hand. "Hi...boss."

Oh God Lisa was doomed. She said it so low and so gutturally, that Lisa shivered again but this time from pure desire and not irritation.

Did she have to use that word? And say it like that?

Great, now all Lisa saw was Jennie sitting at her desk and leaning into her giving her an ample view of her breasts while sweetly asking her if there was anything that she needed.

'Yes'

Lisa mind shouted...

I need you!

Lisa cleared her throat and mentally shook away those naughty thoughts.

"Hi Jennie." Lisa voice was deep and hoarse, and as she tried to pull away, Jennie held on and let her fingernail scrap the inside of Lisa palm.

The silent battle began as her orbs darkened with want. Jennie wanted to be perfectly clear that she wanted her and that she would stop at nothing to get what she wants.

Kathy unaware of the struggle going on between them ran over to the front door and started jumping up and down. "Come on daddy, open the door, I want to show Jennie my new Undress-Me Sally Doll!"

'Undress me...yes please!'

Lisa thought as she continued to stare into her eyes, still unable to move even though every single logical thought in her head told her to run.

"Daddy?" Kathy whined.

Jennie softly laughed and finally released Lisa hand.

Lisa let out the breath that she had been unaware of holding...thank God.

But then Jennie took a step closer and leaned her head up to look at her, Lisa could feel her hot breath on her neck and her body responded by tightening with lust.

"I guess playing with Undress Me Sally must be really..." Jennie stepped even closer and her hard nipples grazed her shirt. Her breath hitched at the contact and when she spoke again it was deep and dripping with want, "...exciting."

Lisa gulped and tried to resist her pull, but she couldn't control the way her eyes turned even darker and that God damn devil egging

her on again; 'and hot and sexy and so damn fine, and so...untouchable', her eyes became hard slits as she once again regained her senses, she took a step back and Jennie gave her the sexiest little pout that she had ever seen, which made her scowl at her even more.

Turning away from the vixen she stepped up to the front door and fumbled with her keys. Jennie and Kathy both giggled as they watched her.

Lisa glared at them," What's so funny?"

Jennie of course knew her dilemma but Kathy the sweet little innocent that she was, was clueless. "Your hands are shaking...did you have too much coffee again daddy?" But knowledgeable, so it seemed, about what coffee did to you if you drank too much.

Jennie's eyebrow went up and she addressed Lisa. "Drinking too much coffee a common thing with you?" She asked. This concerned her, because she wanted her healthy, if Lisa wanted to drown herself in caffeine by all means but at least wait till she was through with her.

Lisa didn't answer right away because for some reason Jennie sounded concerned and that couldn't be, why would she care. Lisa glared at her, and Jennie glared back. In her agitation she forcefully stuck the key in the lock and opened the door.

Kathy ran inside, "Come on Jennie I want to show you my room."

Lisa stepped aside to let Jennie walk in first, but that was a mistake. Because she evilly leered at her as she did, and slyly grazed her hand across her crotch as she passed. "I'd love to see your room baby." Jennie said as she stared deeply into Lisa's eyes. What a brazen little thing!

Lisa took a moment to calm her breath and adjust her now rock-hard cock. She closed her eyes and concentrated on all the reasons why she could not do what she wanted to do...

'too young, jailbait, you'd be a pervert, you'd be a pervert in jail.'

"Ah boss..."

'Oh god not that word again!'

"Are you waiting for the mosquitoes to join us?" Jennie laughed softly at the dumbfounded look that was in her eyes when she opened them. Then she shook her head at Lisa when she scowled at her and slammed the door shut.

"Come on Jennie." Kathy said as she started to run up the stairs.

"Kathy, I need to speak with Jennie first okay, so go upstairs and I'll send her up when we're through." She pouted sadly but nodded and headed upstairs.

Well, Jennie thought, things were moving quite fast, not what she expected but hey she wasn't going to complain.

"Boss, do you think I could have a glass of water? I'm a little thirsty."

Lisa looked at her, Jennie seemed quite happy with herself for some reason; like she just had everything that she wanted handed to her on a silver platter. Lisa scowled, well she did not, and it was up to her to set it straight.

"The kitchen is down the hall and to your left. I'll be in the library when you're ready."

Jennie smiled sweetly at her harsh tone. "Alrighty..." then added huskily, "...I'll see you there." She turned and walked down the hall and of course Lisa couldn't help but watch...again.

When Jennie disappeared around the corner Lisa slapped herself on the head and walked inside the library. She had to stop this flirting. She was the adult here she had to put a stop to this, take control of the situation before it really got out of hand. She had to just come right out and explain to Jennie that nothing was ever going to happen between them.

A few minutes later Jennie walked in with her glass of water and stood in the doorway for one second watching Lisa. She looked

overly concerned and...serious, serious...oh damn, she wasn't ready to give in yet. Jennie sighed and walked further in the room sitting down in the chair opposite him.

"So what's up boss?"

Lisa fixed her with a stern glare. "First off stop calling me that."

Jennie eyebrow went up casually, "Why? You are my boss you know."

Lisa tried not to fidget in her seat the second that suggestive word came out of her mouth, but damn it, the images it invoked were way to strong not too. Lisa shifted slightly to the left; Jennie smirked at Lisa; she scowled back.

'Take control Lalisa.'

She sat up straight in her chair and tried to pretend that she was in a business meeting...straight forward and to the point.

"Look Jennie, I can't deny the obvious...attraction that there is between us..."

Jennie leaned forward putting her elbows on the desk and leaned her chin in her hands. Her eyes sparkled with mischief. "Is it that...obvious? I thought I was being subtle."

Lisa couldn't help but smirk at her. She was just so cute in her little

'I'm so innocent act'.

Seeing that sexy smirk on Lisa's face turned her insides to jelly and Jennie practically purred as she blasted her with her biggest smile. "You know...that's a very sexy look for you."

Lisa scowled.

Jennie purred, "Mmmm...so is that."

Lisa abruptly stood up and slapped her hands on the desk. "Stop it!"

"What?" She said innocently.

Lisa turned away and started to pace behind her desk. Jennie sat back in her chair and watched.

"You know what I'm talking about, don't try to play all innocent. All this flirting and insinuations have to stop! Yes I'm attracted to you but you are seventeen and I'm twenty-nine! There can never be anything between us! It's wrong! It's sick and twisted! I could go to jail for Christ's sake! I can't go to jail...I have a daughter to raise, a business to run. Not to mention that you're only seventeen and you don't know what you want! It's infatuation that's all!"

Jennie sat back and listened to her rant; it sounded more like she was trying to convince herself than her. And she actually felt sorry for her. It was obvious Lisa was a decent, morally correct girl and she felt that was really trying to do the right thing.

It was also quite clear to her that Lisa had been ignoring her own personal needs over her daughter's. Which was great because it showed Jennie that she cared more for her daughter than for herself, which was the way it was supposed to be. But she was still a person, and she needed a little

'her time'.

Lisa was definitely way too stressed out, the tension that radiated off of her as she continued to pace and rant made that very apparent.

Poor baby probably hadn't gotten laid in a long time. Jennie felt a pull on her heart for Lisa, and she decided in that second that she would slow down her seduction...just a little, at least for now until Lisa could come to grips with her own simmering desires. She smiled as she wondered just how long Lisa would be able to hold back, it should be very entertaining.

"...this is purely a professional business relationship and that's it...it's all it ever can be..."

"Lisa."

"...there can never ever be..."

"Lisa."

Lisa stopped and looked at her. "What?"

"Okay."

"Okay..." Her eyes were slits she didn't believe her, "...just like that?"

Jennie demurely crossed her legs. "Yes, just like that. Look I need the job okay and I really like Kathy, and I don't want to make you feel uncomfortable or make you feel like you can't trust me...so okay, I'll lay off."

Jennie looked like she was dead serious and for a moment Lisa was mad...she felt, unwanted. But it was what she wanted, wasn't it? Lisa pushed aside her hurt ego and gave her a strained smile. Feeling somewhat relaxed and more in control of the situation, she accepted her answer.

"Okay...good."

"So what are my duties?" Jennie asked.

Lisa scowled, was she teasing again?

Jennie saw the look and put her hands up. "I don't mean anything by it, I swear, it's an innocent enough question don't you think? I do have to take care of Kathy right and I need to know how to do that."

Lisa features relaxed and sat back down. "Yes, it is I'm sorry." God, Jennie had her so wound up she didn't know which way she was going anymore. Either that or it was her own perverted lust filled thoughts that would not let her think of anything else.

"No problem. So..."

Okay good, back to business. Lisa switched from being unsure of what was going on, to the controlled businessman that Jennie was sure she was used to and felt comfortable in. Her words were crisp,

precise and to the point. And it turned her on. For Jennie, there was nothing that was more of a turn on than a confident handsome girl, and here Lisa was showing that side of her and Jennie had to really hold back the desire to jump across the desk, rip her clothes off and embed herself on her cock.

"Kathy gets out of day care at 2:30PM, what time do you get out of school?"

God she could just imagine what Lisa would feel like inside of her, taking her, sliding in and out...

"Jennie?" Lisa asked, she looked like she was a in a daze.

"Ah? Oh sorry ah...two o'clock."

Lisa nodded. "Are you able to pick her up?"

"Sure."

"On time?" Lisa gave her that 'can you be responsible look'; the same look that Mino would give her, and it annoyed her, just like it annoyed her coming from Mino.

"Yes on-time." She gratingly said.

Lisa nodded unaware of Jennie agitation at her question. She was in full-blown business mood and just kept going. "That old car in the driveway...it's yours?"

"No, it's my brothers." She laughed, "I sometimes...borrow it."

"Well, it's not going to do. I can't have you picking up my daughter in that piece of shit. No offense."

"None Taken."

Lisa threw her a set of keys, which she caught deftly. "These are the keys to my BMW and the house."

Jennie eyeballs went wide right after BMW. "Whoa, hold it. You're giving me your BMW?"

What is she nuts! "No, I'm letting you use it while you watch Kathy, to pick her up, take her to the park, whatever. When you go home at night the car stays here, understand?"

'Don't you mean, if I go home at night lover?'

"Oh okay, fair enough."

"Good, now as for Kathy..."

"Wait."

"What?"

"What are you going to drive?"

"That's not really important."

"Not important, sure it is, I'm taking your car and I want to know what you're going to use?"

"Jennie..." Lisa sounded so exasperated with her that she could not stop from smiling, which made her suspicious. "Are you teasing me again?"

Way too uptight, Jennie thought. "Geez Lisa lighten up, I'm genuinely concerned."

"Why?"

Jennie shrugged and answered her honestly. "Because I like you."

Lisa heart skipped a beat and she stared at her, not knowing whether to believe her or not. God when had she become such an untrusting uptight asshole? Lisa really had to relax and give her chance. She smiled "Well I...like you too."

Jennie smile widened and her checks redden a little as she got a little warm, Lisa was so gorgeous when she smiled and once again, she felt a little tug on her heart.

Lisa just stared back at her Jennie was so blindingly beautiful that

she completely forgot what the hell they were talking about. They sat there gazing endlessly into each other's eyes, smiling, a warm flow of passion and beginning love, streaming back and forth, pulsing with soon to be life.

Under Lisa warm deep chocolate gaze Jennie actually blushed and shifted in her seat, as she was hit with a strong vibrating pulse in between her legs.

Lisa finally looked away and asked sheepishly, "...so ah, where were we?"

Jennie cleared her throat, "You were going to tell me what you would be driving?"

Lisa shook her head, "right, I um have a GTX that I can use."

She nodded, "It's not a junk box like mine, is it?" Because then really what was the point?

Lisa looked completely insulted. "Hell No! It's completely restored thank you very much."

Jennie laughed at her outburst. "Okay, sorry I asked."

For the next hour they talked easily and comfortably about what her babysitting duties actually were. It was pretty simple as far as Jennie was concerned, and she suddenly felt like giving Mino a big fat kiss for sending her here to begin with.

She really liked Kathy and she could tell that the poor kid needed someone to be her friend and Jennie wanted to be there for her. And the father, well the father needed her too; she just didn't know it yet.

Jennie realized that she really liked her as a person, and not just a sex god. Jennie really wanted to get to know Lisa, find out what made her tick, because she knew that she was already glued to her heart, soul, and soon to be, body.

Lisa on the other hand was quite pleased with herself and the way she handled things. It was always good to be honest and upfront.

And now that Jennie knew where she stood everything would be fine. While Lisa still lusted after her it would be a lot easier to deny it when Jennie wasn't throwing it back in her face.

Lisa was now in control, and she felt confident that Jennie would do a wonderful job handling Kathy. Yes, this could work out beautifully. When they were done talking, Lisa went back to work feeling safe and sure, and Jennie went up to Kathy's room.

While playing with Kathy, Jennie couldn't stop herself from scheming up her next plan of action. Because while she did say she would lay-off, she didn't say she would stop. So, the way she figured it she would lay-off of the forward seduction and instead switch tactics to the subtle seduction that was fair, wasn't it?

She giggled.

"What's funny Jennie?" Kathy asked.

'Oh if you only knew sweet child'

She smiled, "Nothing sweetie...nothing at all."

Ch 5

Jennie dimmed the lights and sat down on the edge of the bed. She pulled the covers up under Kathy's chin and tucked her in around the sides.

Kathy watched Jennie with something that was close to reverence. She had never ever had anyone spend so much time with her and she was completely enthralled with the older girl. Even her daddy had never spent so much time with her in one day as Jennie did today.

They had played all day; Jennie had taken her to the park where she had pushed Kathy on the swing set. Then she had made her lunch and let her swim in the pool until she looked like a prune. She made her dinner and then after dinner they watched Aladdin. She never had someone that cared for her like that and her little heart felt like it was going to burst.

"I had a great day Jennie," she said shyly.

Jennie leaned over her and kissed her forehead, smiling warmly at her, "Me too sweetie."

"Can we do it again tomorrow?"

Jennie laughed, "Of course we can."

Jennie was almost overwhelmed with the motherly feelings this small child invoked in her. She knew Kathy was pretty much ignored by the people in her life, and so she had set out to give her a day that she'd never experienced before. She knew that she'd succeeded by the happy cherub smile that almost blinded her and Jennie planned on giving her more days like this one.

Although she spent all day with Kathy, her mind had still lingered on the Father. When she was pushing Kathy on the swing, Jennie

couldn't help but wonder what she was doing at that same moment. She found herself wondering what it would be like to press her lips against her, to taste the hidden recesses of her mouth, to just bask in her incredible sexy womanliness. Jennie also found herself wondering about her in general like her past and she made a mental note to ask Kathy.

Seeing that there was no better time than right now, she asked. "Kathy do you remember your mommy?"

"No, I was just a baby when she died." She leaned over and took a picture off the table proudly showing it to Jennie. "This is my mommy."

Jennie took the picture from Kathy and looked at a beautiful young woman with blonde hair and blue eyes. She was holding her little bundle of joy, smiling happily, but Jennie noticed that the happy smile did not reach those blues eyes instead they were...cold and detached.

She forced herself to smile as she looked up at Kathy. "She's beautiful Kathy."

Kathy shook her head, "She's Uncle Mino's sister, but they don't look alike at all. Uncle Mino says that she took after their nana, and he took after their father."

Jennie was shocked to hear that, she had known Mino almost her whole life and never knew he had a sister. Wasn't this interesting...so Lisa and Mino were brother in laws...mmm. Why would he never mention that little bit of information?

Jennie looked back at Kathy who was staring at the picture intently, there was a touch of sadness in her brown eyes and Jennie's heart broke for her. She knew what it felt like to miss a parent; she understood the loneliness that consumed your heart, and the desolated feeling that no one loved you. She hated to see that in Kathy's eyes and she shouldn't have too, unlike Jennie's situation, Kathy still had a parent, she was just not around and Jennie decided that she would change that.

"Your daddy and mommy must have been very happy together." She smiled right before a vision of Lisa hunched over Carla slamming into her over and over again swam before her eyes. She felt the bile rise up in her throat and she felt like she was going to puke. Then the vision changed and she saw herself choking the life out of the other blonde, gleefully laughing as she did it. Jennie cleared her head of the images...what the hell was wrong with her?

Kathy shook her head up and down. "They were arraigned."

Jennie looked back at Kathy, 'ah...arraigned, what were they criminals or something?' her brow quirked up, no she must of heard her wrong. "They were what?"

"Arraigned. Grandpa Dave said that daddy's parents wanted daddy to marry mommy, when they died daddy did what they wanted daddy to do. Grandpa Dave said that daddy was a very dutiful daughter."

Jennie smiled, "Oh...you mean it was an arranged marriage?"

Wow, they still did that these days? How...barbaric

, but it explained a lot. Thinking back to the first day she met Lisa, and how she didn't seem to upset about the subject of her dead wife, it now made sense and that put an honest to God true smile on her face. Because if it was a loveless marriage that meant that she didn't have to deal with feelings for a dead wife, which would make her seduce much more easier.

"That's what I said!" Kathy said indignantly.

Jennie chuckled feeling much better now. "Of course, you did sweetie, my bad I'm sorry."

"That's okay. You know she was a teacher, my mommy." She said proudly.

"She was?" Jennie said disbelievingly. That was not what she expected to hear. Those eyes were not the warm caring eyes of a teacher; they were more like the cold calculating eyes of a bitch.

Kathy nodded happily.

Okay she had to ask, "What did she teach?"

"Awobics and yodi." Kathy confidently said.

AH? It took only a couple of seconds before Jennie understood what she meant...kids were so cute!

She smiled, "Oh...you mean aerobics and yoga." Again, not what she expected to hear, the woman in the picture did not look like the athletic type, she looked more like a pampered do-everything-for-me princess.

Kathy sighed, "That's what I said Jennie, aren't you listening?"

Jennie chuckled, "I'm sorry sweetie. I am listening. Did your daddy tell you that?"

Kathy suddenly looked away and her little face turned pink, "Not exactly."

Ah...a child after her own heart. She gently took Kathy's chin in her hands guiding her back to look at her, yup...there it was, the guilt.

"Were you eavesdropping?" She tried to sound stern, because really it was a bad habit but she couldn't because that would make her a hypocrite and she may be a lot of things but she was not a hypocrite.

Kathy shook her head and whispered. "I heard daddy and Uncle Mino talking about how mommy was a teacher and that she could spread her legs wider than anyone in town."

Jennie's mouth dropped open...

'spread her legs better than anyone i

n

town...a teacher

?' Holy shit... this poor

kid.

She would have laughed out loud if it weren't for the overwhelming sympathy she felt for her. She would have to warn Lisa that she had an eavesdropper in the house. And someone seriously needed to set this poor disillusioned child straight.

"That's...nice sweetie. Okay enough talking, bedtime now. Your daddy will be home soon and I want her to see how good I take care of you." She kissed her on the cheek, stood up and walked over to the door.

Turning around she smiled warmly at the picture Kathy made of just a little blonde head sticking out of the covers. "Night Kathy."

"Goodnight, Jennie."

Jennie started to close the door, when Kathy called out to her..."Jennie?"

"Yeah."

"I love you."

Jennie's heart filled with love and a tear came to her eye. "I love you too sweetie...now go to sleep."

"Otay."

Jennie closed the door quietly, walked downstairs and headed toward the kitchen. She couldn't help but smile sadly as their conversation played over in her mind; she definitely had to talk to Lisa about this, because it was just really sad how disillusioned this kid was. Lisa really needed to spend more time with her.

Entering the kitchen Jennie checked her watch, it was almost nine o'clock and Lisa would be home soon. Jennie made a plate of food for her and threw it in the oven to warm up, just in case she was hungry. She turned on the radio that was on the counter, cranked up the volume and put on the apron. She turned the water on in the

sink and started to wash the dishes. Lost in her world of Usher, she didn't hear the front door opening. She didn't hear the footsteps walking down the hall. And she didn't hear the quick intake of breath from the kitchen doorway.

Lisa stood in the doorway and gazed at the goddess moving seductively to the music coming from the radio. She had on a pair of short shorts and her perfect little ass swayed back and forth to the beat of the smooth R&B song that played. She lifted her arm and swayed her hips and the soapy water ran enticingly down her arm.

Lisa had two fantasies that were playing in her mind simultaneously. The first, Jennie was sitting in a tub with bubbles surrounding her, her breasts floated at the top, her nipples peeked out of the suds and she called to him with her hypnotic sultry voice...'

come

inside and play with me...'

The other, was much more...basic...her behind Jennie fucking her hard and fast. God it would be so easy...just a couple of strides away and she could be pressed up behind, rubbing her hard cock in between those tight little cheeks. Lisa could put her hands on her perfect tits and squeeze them roughly, tweaking her nipples as she plunged into her welcoming heat over and over and over again...

BANG...her briefcase slipped out and hit the tiled floor.

Jennie jumped at the sound and turned around. Ahhh...she thought it was getting a little hot in here. "Hey." She said sweetly as her eyes raked down her perfectly suited form. She almost laughed because Lisa looked a little uncomfortable at being caught staring at her.

"Hey." Lisa leaned down and picked up her briefcase, placing it on the table; she walked further into the kitchen and sat down at the table.

'

Keep it professional...you're her boss, she's your employee...oh

god...don't think that!'

Lisa cleared her throat. "How did it go today?'

Jennie smiled, all business, the poor girl was trying so hard to ignore her. Oh well she'll play along for now, because she really wanted to talk to her about Kathy first before playtime began. "Great...you have a wonderful kid, Lisa."

The smile that crossed her face was one of pride and relieve. Finally, a subject she felt comfortable talking about, a subject where there was no way in hell her sick depraved mind could venture off into sex.

"Thanks."

Walking over to the oven, Jennie pulled on the oven mitt she opened the door and leaned down reaching inside to grab the plate she had been heating up. "She's very bright you know."

Lisa gulped as she stared at her ass. "Yeah, I know." Sounding less at ease then she did a few seconds ago.

Standing up Jennie turned around and walked over to the table, she placed the plate in front of Lisa then turned around to the fridge and took a beer out placing it in front of her, smiling at her the whole time. "Do you?" She asked as she sat down.

"What does that mean?" Lisa asked clearly confused by her question.

Jennie shrugged, "Call it woman's intuition." She chuckled at the blank look on her face. "Actually, it's kind of hard not to notice plus...she told me so."

Lisa lowered her head shamefully as Sadness entered her eyes. "No...I don't. But it's not because I don't want to, I just...I have a business to run, and I have to be there...and...."

Jennie stopped her because she could see Lisa was getting very agitated and stressed. Jennie placed her hand on top of her, making her eyes immediately jump up, Jennie squeezed gently gazing back at her with understanding.

"Lisa, you don't have to explain it to me. I'm not the lonely little girl upstairs that wishes she spent more time with her daddy."

Lisa pulled her hand from her warm grasp and frustratingly ran it through her hair. She sighed deeply, "I know."

As Jennie watched she could see the tension on her shoulders, a result of the strain of working from six in the morning to nine o'clock at night and raising a child at the same time. Her heart opened a little more for Lisa as she said, "It must be hard raising a child on your own."

Lisa smiled, "Well it's definitely not a walk in the park."

"You shouldn't be so hard on yourself; you're doing all you can do."

They shared a warm appreciative smile together. "Now eat before your food gets cold." Jennie teasingly scolded her.

"Yes ma'am."

Smiling, Lisa picked up her fork and started to eat chicken parmesan. Her eyes rolled back as the divine taste filled her mouth.

"Oh my God Jennie...this is really, really good."

She smiled, "Thank you." Jennie watched Lisa as she ate, correction, as she devoured the food on her plate. Guess she was really hungry.

"Lisa?"

"Mmm."

"Can I ask you something?"

"Mmmm."

"Was Carla a teacher?"

"No, what makes you ask that?"

"Kathy seems to think she was."

"Why would she say that?" Lisa asked with a mouthful of food.

"Because she heard you and Mino talking. Let's see her exact words were... 'mommy could spread her legs wider than anyone in town.'"

Lisa immediately coughed and started to choke on her food. Jennie quickly jumped up and ran behind to smacking her on the back.

"What?" Lisa sputtered as she reached for a napkin.

Jennie smacked Lisa a few more times until she put her hand up in the air telling her to stop. Lisa grabbed her beer and took a long swig.

Jennie stood behind staring at her shoulders and muscled back. Jennie couldn't help but continue to calmly rub her back, her hands delighting in the smooth hardness under them. When Jennie spoke her voice was an octave lower. "Yup, it seems your daughter likes to eavesdrop. Now I'm pretty sure that Carla was not a teacher, and I'm pretty sure of what you guys were really saying, but Kathy of course is young and she doesn't understand that, so she heard what she knows, what she wanted to hear."

Lisa didn't know what to say or how to explain that Carla was anything but a teacher. Obviously, Jennie knew exactly what Carla really was, so she was thankful she didn't have to explain it but still it was very embarrassed by the whole thing. Lisa always had been and now that Jennie knew, she was even more humiliated.

"Jennie...my marriage to Carla was not exactly..." Lisa tried to search for the best words to explain her marriage to that bitch but was at a loss.

Jennie sensed her discomfort and interrupted "Lisa, it's none of my business, all I'm saying is that I think you need to be more careful about where and what and how loud you say things."

Okay now she felt even more like shit. It was bad enough that Jennie knew about Carla, but it was much worse to learn that her daughter thought she was a bloody saint! God she was a terrible Dad.

Lisa placed a fork down on the table and grabbing her beer stood up abruptly, startling Jennie. She was annoyed, embarrassed and ashamed, and she did not want to face her. "I'll be in the library, thanks for dinner. I'll see you tomorrow." Lisa curtly said as she walked out of the kitchen.

Jennie watched Lisa go with a heavy heart. She sighed deeply and cleaned up her plate. When she was done, she poured a brandy and walked to the library.

Lisa sat at her desk in the dark, but Jennie could see her brow furrowed in concentration. She didn't mean to upset her; she was only worried about Kathy and thought that she needed to know what she was thinking.

Lisa sensed her the second she stepped in the doorway, she looked up and saw Jennie, the light from the hallway illuminating her in an iridescent glow of beauty and her breath was taken away. She felt bad for being so abrupt with her. Jennie was only trying to help, but it was a touchy subject. It made her feel more like a stupid idiot.

"I'm sorry...I didn't mean to be so curt with you. It's just that Carla is not my favourite conversation." Lisa stopped and wondered how much she should tell. Even though it was the most shameful, most embarrassing time in her life and felt uneasy telling her, she also felt comfortable telling her...it was odd, and it made no sense. But she found the words just started to come out of her mouth and she couldn't stop.

"There was no love between us, it was an arranged marriage, and she was...cheating on me from the beginning. When she died, I was just relieved to finally not have her associated with me or Kathy anymore. For that matter; she was not the most...motherly woman in the world."

Jennie quietly walked in and stood beside her. Jennie placed the glass down in front of Lisa and walked behind her. Placing her hands on Lisa shoulders, started to slowly massage her stiff muscles.

Lisa closed her eyes the second Jennie strong hands touched her

shoulders. "God that feels good," she moaned. Getting lost in her skillful ministrations, she never once thought that this was probably going to lead to bad things.

Jennie smiled warmly. "Lisa, it's okay I understand. And I don't blame you at all. I didn't mean to pry into your business, I just...look I know how it feels to grow up with no parents around, and I don't want Kathy getting into some of the shit that I did."

Lisa smiled she could just imagine what some of that shit was. "A wild one, ah?" she teased.

Jennie giggled and leaned down to whisper in her ear. "Wild and...adventuresome."

God, she smelled so good, and Jennie couldn't resist running her tongue along the rim of her ear as her hands continued to work out the tension in her stiff shoulders.

At the cool wet touch of her tongue, Lisa mind no longer thought of her dead wife or her misdirected child, her mind was totally enthralled by the woman behind her.

Lisa moaned as pleasure filled every inch of her body and soul from Jennie actions, pleasure that she had craving for what seemed like a lifetime. Jennie taking advantage of Lisa compliance kissed her ear then nip it gently. Jennie took a chance and moved her hands down she pressed down then rotated them in circles, feeling Lisa nipples press into her palms.

"You're so tense..."Jennie whispered as she kissed Lisa's neck. Her fingers deftly unbuttoned her shirt, and her hands slid inside. She moaned as she finally touched her smooth skin, and she raked her nails down her chest.

Jennie continued to kiss Lisa neck with hot open mouth kisses. When jennie reached the base of her neck and collarbone she took a mouthful of skin and bite, laving the bite with her tongue.

Lisa moaned as she tilted her head to give Jennie better access and her hand rose on its own accord and sank into her golden silky hair,

massaging her scalp. "Jennie...," Lisa whispered.

Jennie moaned back and shifted on her feet as she felt desire stirring in her core. Lisa tugged on her head, pulling her around to the side of the chair.

Jennie leaned into the chair and ran her hand down the side of her face, leaning down. Lisa opened her eyes and looked into Jennie dark green orbs, her mouth only a lick away. They stood there staring at each other getting lost in the lust that they saw in the other's eyes.

Lisa pulled her head down and as their mouths grew closer their eyes stayed on each other, their breath mingled and their heartbeats increased.

"Jennie...." Lisa said as their lips finally touched and their mouths sealed over each other, their tongues playing slowly and languidly.

Lisa's hand rose up to Jennie's leg and squeezed her thigh then slowly travelled up to her ass. Lisa's fingers splayed across her ass cheek squeezing it roughly, making Jennie moan even louder. Her other hand came around and spanned her waist.

Their kisses became more hurried, more forceful. Jennie pulled away slightly and ran her tongue across Lisa lower lip then took it between her teeth caressing it soothingly with her tongue. Jennie moved her hand down toward her ultimate goal. When she finally got there, she squeezed her cock hard all the while marvelling at how big and hard she was, she moaned again. God she couldn't wait till she was inside of her.

Lisa growled at her boldness and roughly grabbed her by the waist and dropped her on top of her desk. Lisa spread her legs wide and rolled the chair forward till she was in between them, all the while still kissing her passionately, urgently.

Jennie gripped her hair painfully as Lisa pulled away and started to kiss a trail down her neck to the crevice of her breasts. Lisa hands came up and pushed their way under her tank top. Reaching her breasts she squeezed and they moaned together.

Jennie needing more pulled her shirt off and sat back pushing Lisa head into her bare breasts. "Lisa...." She murmured as she positioned her feet on the edge of the chair squeezing her sides.

Lisa was lost, lost in a sea of desire and beautiful young firm breasts. She took a nipple roughly in his mouth sucking hard and then laving it with her tongue, tapping quickly on the hard nub. God this was where she had dreamed of being for the past two days and she couldn't get enough. So sweet...so firm...so ripe with lust, she nostrils flared as she caught a whiff of her succulent desirous aroma and she knew she had to touch her, she had to feel her wetness, had to be inside her.

Lisa hand snuck in between her legs and under her shorts, her finger making contact with the lace edge of her thong. Lisa ran it up and down Jennie covered slit...God she was so wet, she growled again wanting nothing more than to taste her juices. "Mmmm so wet...so hot..." Lisa murmured in her breasts then she took a nipple in her mouth and sucked hard, as she pushed her finger underneath her thong and lightly touched her wet lips...they moaned in unison..."Yes...please...touch me...feel me..." Jennie whined.

"Daddy?"

Suddenly Lisa stopped, hearing the scared little voice of her daughter; she lifted her face from Jennie's breasts and looked quickly toward the door that was wide open.

"Daddy?" the scared voice said again, this time louder.

Jennie finally hearing it too opened her eyes and looked up at Lisa. She had an almost feral look on her face like she was extremely pissed off for being annoyed.

"Daddy?" the voice hiccupped and a small cry followed.

Lisa turned to look at Jennie, the feral fervent look gone, she looked at her and where she was and what they were doing and she turned cold...ice cold. What the hell was she doing! Violently she pushed away from the desk, away from the temptress, and stood up.

"I'm sorry..." was all Lisa said, as she turned away and practically ran out of the room closing the door behind.

"Daddy's here baby..."

Jennie heard Lisa say as she fell back on the desk, trying to catch her breath and calm her smoldering needs.

Ch 6

The Next Day...

What demon had possessed her? Didn't she have everything in control? Hadn't she set the rules and Jennie agreed? Then why the hell did she practically molest her last night on her desk?

Lisa smirked well she couldn't actually say molesting that wasn't fair, because in all honesty Jennie was the one that had started the whole thing. Jennie was the one that had put her strong confident little hands on her tense shoulders that cried for release. She was the one that stuck that little skillful tongue in her ear and kissed her on the neck.

Lisa leaned back in her chair and closed her eyes. God she was so beautiful, so sure of herself. Her legs had been smooth and strong; her breasts had tasted like heaven...no she had tasted like heaven every single inch had been the sweetest nectar that she had ever sampled.

Jennie was a divine sex goddess that was it. Preying on lost lonely horny souls like her, there was no other explanation to explain her complete and utter lack of discipline and control. God if Kathy hadn't come downstairs looking for comfort from a bad dream, she would have taken her right there on her desk without thought, it would have been hot mindless violent sex...God it would've been great!

But it would have been a mistake, a big mistake, it was something that she had strictly forbidden to herself; to let loose her own simmering desires. But she couldn't stop herself the whole scene had been too much. From the moment that she stepped inside the house and smelled the delicious aromas coming from the kitchen to the moment that Jennie started to massage her shoulders, was so...domesticated. It felt so right, so much like an everyday occurrence. It was something that she didn't even realize she had

been craving.

She'd never had feelings of family and happiness with Carla. With Carla, it was all about money, and the freedom to run around and fuck anyone she could. There was no consideration for her or even for her daughter. Carla had always been cold to Kathy from the moment she came out of her womb. She had wanted nothing to do with her. She gave birth, hired a nanny, and that was it...that was the role that she had played.

Jennie had been in the house for one day and already she fell right into the motherly, caretaker role; a role in which she was obviously comfortable and proficient, and a role that apparently, Lisa shifted uncomfortably in her chair and adjusted her semi-hard cock, turned her on immensely.

Her thoughts then wandered to her baby girl...and she scowled remembering what Jennie had said. Lisa never knew she listened in on her conversations with Mino, but she should have. She had to warn Mino about this, so they didn't get caught talking again.

Lisa sighed deeply troubled; her poor baby was completely disillusioned about who her mother was. But what could she do? How do you tell a four-year-old that her mother was nothing but a greedy whore that didn't give two shits about her?

"Ms. Manoban, Mr. David is here." Cordy's terse voice came over the loudspeaker, followed by Mino's soft voice... "How about a drink later luv?"

"Ms. Manoban?" Cordy's pleading voice came across again.

Lisa sighed, "Alright Cordy let him in."

The door swung open... "We'll talk later pet." and Mino strolled in with all his normal Mr. Cool flair, "Lalisa...my Girl, where do you find these voluptuous assistants, the Victoria Secrets shop?"

Mino threw his coat on the couch and sat down in the chair opposite a glaring Lisa. He ignored the irritation on the others face and went right into the reason he was here.

"So, what's up? How was my wild child's first day?" Mino asked as he took out a cigarette and lit it.

Lisa scowled,

'his wild child?

' She had a lot of questions for Mino regarding Jennie, and one of them just so happened to be about this 'his' shit. Lisa didn't like hearing those words come out of his mouth. She would look back later and admit she was jealous but now, in the moment, the thought never crossed her mind. She was a victim of her own basic natural possessiveness, and she had the urge to slap that smug smile right off of Mino's face.

She swivelled around in her chair and leaned forward on her desk, "Your wild child?" she asked quietly.

Mino shrugged and missed the stony tone of Lisa's voice, "It's an expression mate."

All right she'll give him that, for now. "Wild child?" She prodded once more.

Mino chuckled, "Yeah a name I gave her when she was ten."

Lisa's eyes almost popped out of her head. "You've known Jennie since she was ten? How?"

"I was pals with her older brother Riley."

Lisa eyed him. Shit she thought she knew Mino, Lisa would have sworn up and down till he was blue in the face that she knew every single thing there was to know about her brother-in-law, yet here he was proving her wrong.

Well, she was going to find out everything she wanted to know today... because it was becoming clear to her that this infatuation was not going away. If last night was a sign of anything, it was that she had absolutely no control when it came to Jennie, and that left her at a disadvantage and gave Jennie the upper hand. There was no way in hell she was doing that. "What's her story, Mino?"

Mino looked confused by her question, "Her story?"

"Yeah, her story, like why do you call her wild child? And how come I never heard of her or Riley."

Mino shrugged, "Don't know mate, never thought it was important."

As Lisa continued to stare him down, Mino relented. "All right well let's see...I met Riley in the reserves and then after that we enrolled in USD together. We hung out, I went to his house met his folks, Jennie, Scott and Owen. Now Scott and Owen were the middle kids, and they were enrolled in military school and about a month after I met them, the folks packed them all up in the car to take them back to school. But they never made it. Got slammed in the rear by a tractor trailer that lost its breaks, killed everyone instantly."

Mino gave her a minute to soak all that in. He still got shivers when he thought about it; the horror of practically loosing your whole family in one shot...was a little spooky.

"So after that, Riley was left to take care of Jennie, which he didn't accept to well. You know him being a freshman in college and right out of the reserves, he wanted to party not look out for little sis. And she was a handful that one, more than Kathy. I mean she was always a little rambunctious, but when her parents died, she went wild. Riley didn't look after her much so she spent a lot of time looking out for herself."

He chuckled, "I gave her the nickname Wild Child because about six months after her parents died, she stole Riley's dirt bike and went up to The Club B, where she hung out till three in morning. Riley and I had to fetch the little imp. God, you should have seen her Lalisa, ten years old and sitting at the bar like she was twenty-five, there must have been ten guys around her all vying for her attention." He shook his head a smile on his face. "I've never seen anyone attract that much attention; I'm telling you it was like bees to honey."

Lisa smiled she could easily picture it and believe it. "So how come you never mentioned them before?"

Mino shifted in his seat slightly and Lisa took note of his sudden discomfort.

"Dunno it never seemed important."

Lisa knew he was lying, "Spit it out Mino, I want to know."

Mino looked her in the eye. "I got into a fight with Riley and after that we went separate ways, like I said nothing important"

No, there was more he wasn't saying Lisa thought, so she pressed on, "Over what?"

Damn it, the bloke was as persistent as an unpaid hooker, quite annoying. He took a deep breath and continued... "Well, I took Riley to task for his treatment, or rather, lake of treatment of Jennie. By the time she was fifteen she had been to more clubs than me for Christ's sake. She was running around, skipping school and just pretty much doing whatever the hell she pleased. I looked at her like my sis, you know, so I said something to Riley he didn't like and that was that."

He took a drag of his cigarette and flicked away a spec of dust on his pants. He played it all cool like and nonchalantly but Lisa knew Mino and she knew there was more to it than that.

"What else?"

Jesus she was unrelenting! He should have known that he would have to tell her worst moment at some point. Okay maybe it wasn't his worst moment so to speak, but it was definitely not his finest. Actually he had a lot of guilt about this particular skeleton in his closet and he never really ever wanted to acknowledge how he had been weak, especially to Lisa, but this girl knew him so well and now he had to admit the one thing in his life that he was not proud of.

"Geez...can't get anything past you eh?"

Lisa smiled confidently at him and shook her head.

Mino stood up and walked over to the window, there was no way

he could look Lisa in the eye and tell her, yup he was a coward, but he respected Lisa and he couldn't stand to see the disgust in her eyes when he told his tale.

"Remember when Dru left me?"

"Yeah, two years ago right?"

"Yeah, well I was a fucking mess. I went to the Club B to get loaded and I walk in, and I see Jennie there sitting at the bar already trashed out of her mind. She was feeling down, thinking of the family she lost and sick of listening to Riley. We shared a bunch of drinks and...."

Lisa already knew what he was going to say and she suddenly felt sick to her stomach. "I don't want to hear anymore."

Mino turned around finally to face her. "Oh no, you asked so I'm telling you. One thing led to another and before I knew what the hell was happening I woke up in Jennie's bed the next morning with Riley's fist in my face."

Lisa stood up quickly and turned away from him. This was not what she wanted to hear, although she had suspected something from their familiarity with each other, she hadn't let herself think that it would be something like this. The thought of Mino sleeping with Jennie made her skin crawl. That he had tasted her and been to heaven made her want to rip his fucking head off.

"After that Riley and I didn't talk anymore. Jennie she was as...uncomfortable with the situation as I was. We talked a few days later and came to terms with it. The ironic thing was that neither one of us remembered anything that happened. I mean I knew it was good...real good, in fact..."

"Shut up Mino." Lisa snarled.

"Yeah well...that's the story. No, it was not my finest moment and not something I'm proud of, but it is what it is and I can't deny it."

Lisa spun around angrily. "Jesus Mino she was what...fifteen?"

Mino irritably replied, "Yes and I'm already ashamed alright! No need to yell at me for it!"

Lisa murmured something under her breath that Mino couldn't make out. But he did notice that Lisa's anger seemed to stem from something more than disgust. In fact if he had to call it anything he would say that she was jealous.

Mino eyeballed her very closely; something else was going on. "Why do you care mate? It happened two years ago before you even met her. Don't tell me you're having fatherly concerns about the lass after only two days?"

Lisa looked away sheepishly. The awkwardness was now on the other foot and she didn't know how to respond.

Her delay in answering and the obvious anxiety in her body told Mino everything that he needed to know. "Oh...I see, feeling a little enamoured with the lass, eh? "

Lisa didn't respond as she still stood with her back to her brother in law. With shoulders stiff and the silent tension radiating from her, she might as well have shouted her guilt as far as Mino was concerned..

"You're sampling the goods, aren't you?" Mino accused her.

Lisa spun around to deny it just as the door to her office opened and the temptress herself walked in.

"Daddy...Uncle Mino!" Kathy squealed with delight as she saw her two favorite people in the world at a time when she normally would not.

Lisa cleared her mind and walked around the desk to catch Kathy in her arms as she jumped up. "Hey sweetheart what are you doing here?" She asked as she watched Jennie walk over to Mino, hug him then kiss him on the check. She scowled and Kathy noticed.

"Are you having a bad day daddy?" She asked.

Jennie looked over at Lisa and was immediately reminded of what

happened last night. She cleared her throat as she felt her panties get wet from the memory. "I hope you don't mind. We were on our way to the mall and Kathy said this was where you worked, and she wanted to see you."

The second she walked into the room she felt stifled. The air was thick with tension and Mino was giving her 'you are so dead' look. Lisa was staring at her with a look of condemnation ...but she couldn't look away from her chocolate orbs. She didn't know what she did to deserve that look. Okay maybe she pushed her too far last night and she was mad at her, but then why was Mino looking like he wanted to wring her neck? There was no way Lisa would have told him, was there?

But as she continued to stare back at Lisa her eyes drilled into her soul looking for something, searching for some sort of answer. It made her slightly uncomfortable and she looked away as her face turned a lovely shade of pink.

Lisa couldn't stop staring at her, she looked at her and she saw Mino kissing her, she saw Mino making love to her and it pissed her off. Then she blushed and looked away and she was reminded of the way her skin had blushed last night from passion. How her eyes had turned two shades darker, how she had tasted, how sexy and exciting she looked sprawled out on his desk her breasts bare to her gaze and mouth.

Lisa involuntarily shuddered and her eyes darkened with want completely immersed in her memories and forgetting that they were not alone in the room.

Mino saw all of this, and he scowled at both of them and loudly cleared his throat.

Lisa turned guilty eyes to Mino and shook herself free from her desirous web. "No it's okay..." she said, and then she turned to Kathy. "Anytime I get to see my little munchkin is a good time." she ruffled her hair as she stood up.

Kathy looked over at Mino, "You having a bad day too Uncle Mino?"

Mino cleared his scowl and faced her smiling. "How can I have a bad day when I'm here talking to my favorite Poppet?"

Kathy giggled, "Jennie's taking me to the mall to buy me new shoes daddy!"

"Oh that's great sweetie." Lisa turned to Jennie pulling out her wallet. "Do you need some money?"

'

God she looks good in that suit…all mouthwatering goodness. She remembered what it felt like to rub that hard chest and taste her skin while her hands roamed over her body…'

"Lass Lisa asked you a question," Mino said quietly.

"Ah?" Jennie snapped out of her stupor and plastered a smile on her face. "No it's on me…my gift, a belated birthday present."

"Jennie Kathy's birthday was last month." Lisa said turning to Kathy ready to scold her for manipulating a gift out of her.

"Well I didn't know her last month, did I silly?" Jennie beamed at her.

Looking back at her beautiful glowing face, she smiled, "No you didn't."

They continued to stare into each other's eyes, each remembering last night's events. Mino walked over to the ashtray and stamped his cigarette out, loudly, breaking the spell that they had over each other.

Jennie smiled heatedly at Lisa then walked over to Kathy. "Okay sweetie let's leave daddy to her work, say goodbye."

Kathy ran back over to Lisa and hugged her leg. "Bye Daddy, I love you."

Lisa reached down and picked her up giving her a big bear hug, she kissed her cheek. "Bye baby have fun, I'll see you later."

"Otay...bye Uncle Mino." She waved as she ran out the door. "Bye Poppet."

Jennie took her time leaving; she walked up to Lisa and smiled brazenly at her. "You'll be home around nine?" she asked breathlessly.

Lisa put on her best business face and tried desperately to ignore the rise in her pants, she also tried to form some sort of verbal answer but all she could was nod her head like an idiot.

Resting her hand on Lisa arm, she squeezed gently and let her fingernail scrap her slightly. "See you later." She whisperingly said.

Heading out the door she called out over her shoulder, "Later Mino."

The door closed with a thud, and Mino looked at the closed door then at Lisa's horny face that hadn't left the door, then back at the door and then back at Lisa. '

No...it couldn't be? But it had to be, those looks, those breathy little words, the total lack of anything intelligent to say from I'm Intelligent All The Time Lisa, it had to be.'

"You're fucking her!" Mino yelled while pointing his finger at the closed door.

Lisa's face turned red, and she hurried around the desk and stood right up into Mino's face. She sneered at him, "I am not fucking her as you so eloquently put it!"

Mino looked deep into her angry eyes and read the truth to her words, but he also saw guilt. He lowered his voice. "Okay, you're not fucking her, but you want to, and something went down. I know...you can't deny it. That lass does not blush for anyone about anything okay! I once saw her kiss another female for fuck's sake and there was definitely no blushing going on then!"

Lisa went to reply but the image of Jennie kissing another girl was such a turn on that she had to look away before Mino saw the heat in her eyes, but it was too late and Mino had to sit down in his

chair as he too got turned on by the image. "Yeah it was pretty fucking hot mate. You should have seen it."

Lisa sat down and snarled running her hand through her hair. "She's killing me Mino. I try to stay away, I try to be professional and business like, and what does she do? She wears little skimpy clothes. She dances in my kitchen. She cooks me dinner. She bats those big green fuck me eyes at me, and swings her ass back and forth like it's just for me. She leans into me, always touching me, breathing on me..."

Mino held up his hand, "I got it mate. No need to go any further."

"God what the hell am I supposed to do? I can't fire her. Kathy loves her and to be honest I think she's the best thing that's happened to me and Kathy."

"I'm sorry mate, I really am. I didn't mean for any of this to happen. I knew Jennie had a thing for older I should never have sent her to you."

Lisa swung his gaze to Minos. "What do you mean a 'thing for older'?"

"Exactly what I said. She doesn't date anyone her age; she thinks they're sloppy and immature."

"Exactly how many older has she been with?"

Mino shrugged. "Well she's not a whore like Carla if that's what you're thinking. I don't really know for sure, but I know she was no virgin when we got together, and whenever I see her at The Club she's always with older men."

Lisa scowled darkly. She didn't like thinking of Jennie as a whore, but that was exactly what was going through her mind. Was she just another notch on her bedpost? Was she just being nice to Kathy to get her in her bed?

Mino saw her line of thinking and jumped in to correct her. "She's not like that Lalisa. Jennie may be many things, but a user she is not and she's definitely no whore."

Mino looked at his watch. Damn it he was going to be late for his meeting. "Look I got to go. But you listen to me Lalisa, stay away from her. She's jailbait. That brother of hers is an asshole and if he finds out anything is going on and that you're rich, he'll take you to the cleaners."

Lisa sat down feeling utterly dejected. "I know damn it...that's what I keep telling myself."

Mino opened the door, "Yeah well go get yourself a date or something, take a lot of cold showers just keep your cock in your pants."

Mino walked out slamming the door shut.

"Easier said than done." Lisa said miserably.

Ch 7

It was five o'clock

when Mino and Lisa walked into the mansion. After their conversation earlier in the day at Lisa's office, Mino decided that he needed to step in and do something before the shit it the fan. So, after making some phone calls he called Lisa at four o'clock and told her that he made them double dates. When Lisa said she wasn't interested, Mino told her flat out that Jennie was too much of a hot persistent package for a horny bastard like her to ignore, and that this was the only solution, Lisa begrudgingly agreed.

As soon as they walked into the house they were hit with the sweet aroma of Sweet and Sour Chicken.

"Bloody hell that smells mouthwatering." Mino said.

"I told you." Lisa said as they made their way to the kitchen where they found Jennie and Kathy seated at the table eating their dinner. They were a picture of domestic bliss and warmth, and Mino turned to see Lisa's reaction, which was staring at the scene like a dying woman.

'Sucker.'

He elbowed Lisa in the ribs to snap her out of it and then walked in greeting the girls. "Good evening, ladies."

Jennie was surprised to see them here so early in the evening and she turned to welcome them. "Hey guys this is a nice surprise." She sweetly said.

"Daddy, Uncle Mino!" Kathy said with a mouthful of food, which she ended up spitting out as she talked.

"Hey baby." Lisa said walking over to her and kissing her on the top

of her head.

"Hey poppet." Mino said as he sat down next to Jennie.

Jennie stood up and walked over to the counter; she grabbed a plate and turned toward them, "Hungry?"

"No thanks lass, we're not here to stay, just so Lalisa can change. We got dates." Mino said as he stole a piece of chicken off of Kathy's plate, who giggled at his antics.

Jennie almost dropped the plate she was holding, 'Dates?' She looked over at Lisa who was avoiding her gaze and her eyes turned to slits. "Oh..." she said stonily.

Kathy looked up at Lisa her face crinkled with confusion, "What's a date?"

Lisa looking extremely uncomfortable with her daughter's question and the cold stare from Jennie didn't know what to say; thankfully Mino had no problem speaking up.

He leaned forward on the counter closer to Kathy. "Well, you see Poppet that's when 'adults'..." he said stressing the word, "...go out with friends who are their own age, and they hang out and have fun."

He finished with a smirk in Jennie's direction who looked back at him with flames coming out of her eyes, at least that's what it looked like to Lisa, who was even more uncomfortable.

Standing there Lisa couldn't for the life of her figure out why she felt like she was cheating on her. Lisa felt like she had just betrayed her lover and the guilt was eating her up inside. Damn Mino for coming up with this idea.

Lisa hand went up to loosen Jennie's hands that were strangling her...she shook her head, no to loosen her tie... '

is

it getting hot in here?'

She had to get out of here. "I'll go change."

Jennie watched Lisa, she saw the utter bewilderment and guilt on her face, and she would've laughed if it wasn't for the boiling anger that was slowly consuming her.

Kathy pushed away from the table and grabbed her hand, "I'll help you daddy." Lisa quickly glanced at Jennie once more before practically running out of the room with Kathy.

Jennie leaned back against the counter her arms crossed across her chest and glared at Mino, who looked like an innocent schoolboy. But he couldn't fool her she knew that he was behind this. This 'date' was a result of all that tension that she had felt earlier today in her office. Somehow Mino knew and he didn't approve.

Mino, though he looked cool and unfazed, felt like he was being skinned alive by her heated gaze but knowing Jennie, he knew not to give her the upper hand, so he ignored the urge to turn tail and run and instead popped another piece of chicken in his mouth and turned to face her. "What?" he said.

Jennie just continued to coldly stare at him. She found it comical that he seemed to think that he was going to 'save' Lisa from her...ha, what a laugh. She probably would have laughed if it weren't for the growing desire to rip his fucking head off. She smiled evilly at him and shrugged her delicate shoulders, not saying a word.

'Ah the silent death stare treatment'

Mino sighed and looked at her. "Jennie luv I know what you're up to and I can't allow it."

He had the nerve to shake his head at her like he was scolding a small child. Her eyebrow rose at his audacity, "You can't allow it?" She said quietly and deadly.

"No, I can't! For god's sakes Jennie are you trying to put her in jail or something! You know what Riley would do if he found out! Listen to me for once in your life lass and leave the poor bastard

be."

"How would Riley find out Mino, I wouldn't tell him, I'm sure Lisa wouldn't tell him," Straightening from the counter she walked over to him and leaned down on the table. "I guess that leaves you...would you tell him?"

"Don't play games with me Jennie. You know I wouldn't, look Riley isn't the problem here okay; the problem is you trying to get into her pants. Look...it just isn't right damn it!"

'

Well, well isn't he calling the kettle black.'

"Is that so, so it's not okay for Lisa and I to be together, but it's okay for you too fuck me and leave when I was fifteen?"

"NO damn it that's not what I'm saying!" he shouted at her as he stood up and angrily faced her.

"You're such hypocrite!" She shouted back.

"I am not a hypocrite what happened between you and me was a mistake! Just like this would be if anything happened".

She didn't say anything at first and Mino gulped, suddenly very afraid for his life, because she had the most determined and sternest look on her face, it was a look that he had never seen on her before and it spooked him.

She stood there staring at him coldly and it almost looked like a ring of fire surrounded her. It was like she was some all-powerful Goddess, and he was nothing but a small insignificant mortal, with no powers and no say in anything. He finally understood the depth of her unwavering persistence and how Lisa must be feeling...small, powerless, and...dickless.

Then her eyes soften and her aura of fire lessened to that of a candle burning in the window. "Look Mino, I know you care about me and I know you care about them." The fire in her eyes returned and her next words burned hot with steely resolve. "But really, it's

none of your business and this

'date game'

that you're playing, isn't going to work."

A few minutes later, Lisa and Kathy walked back into the kitchen and Jennie and Mino were still standing there not moving, not speaking, just killing each other with their eyes.

'Okay...it's definitely hot in here.'

Lisa thought, "Ready Mino?" She quietly asked.

Jennie took a step back and smiled at them, all the eerie tenacity gone and replaced with warmth and love.

Mino was completely balled over by the display of control that she had over her emotions and he wondered if he ever really knew her at all. "Yeah." He said to Lisa as he started to leave the kitchen, feeling less like a man than when he first walked in.

Watching Mino walk away with his tail between his legs would have been funny if Lisa didn't have the urge to scream

'I told you so'

at him. But instead, she felt bad for him, because she knew exactly what he was feeling.

"Okay, I'll a...see you guys later." She turned around to catch up with Mino.

"Oh Lisa..." Jennie called out right before they made it to the door.

Lisa was afraid to turn around and look at her, but she sucked it up and did. "Yeah?"

"I thought since it was Friday and I had to be here early tomorrow anyways that I would just stay the night...in the room next to yours".

'What?'

Jennie almost laughed at the look on both of their faces, Mino looked like he wanted to take a baseball bat to her, and her soon to be lover's mouth dropped open at the time same time that she saw a rise in her pants.

She smiled. "That's not a problem I hope?"

Kathy started to jump up and down. "Oh, that would be so much fun Jennie! We could wear our pajamas and have a pajama party!" She ran over to her and looked up at her happily.

Jennie smiled at her, "We sure can sweetie, me and you all dressed up in our...nighties...playing." She huskily said.

Of course, Jennie intended her words to really mean something else and to someone else. Sneaking a peak at Lisa she wickedly laughed inside, her eyes darkened with lust, and they were riveted on her, and, she noticed with a giggle, that her pants rose a little higher.

'Nighties...god she could see it now, Jennie in a barely there negligee...playing...'

Lisa gulped.

Mino grumbled something then punched Lisa in the arm snapping her out of her thoughts. "Let's go mate we'll be late...the ladies are waiting." He said smiling coldly at Jennie, who just smiled innocently back at him.

"Ah...yeah okay." Lisa said dumbly.

"Bye guys, have a great time. Don't worry about us..." she called out as Mino dragged Lisa toward the front door, "...we'll be here...just playing...in our pj's!" Mino slammed the door on her last words.

***

Later that night after she put Kathy to bed, Jennie decided to take a bath, she was very tense, and she needed to relax a little. There must have been five bathrooms in this house, but always thinking

ahead, she chose the bathroom that was on the same wing as her and Lisa's bedroom.

She ran the hot water and poured in some bubbles, discarding her clothes she gingerly stepped into the steaming hot water and slid down till she was completely immersed.

Leaning her head back against the porcelain tub she closed her eyes and willed her body to relax. She had never in her life been as sexually frustrated as she had been since the moment she stepped into this house. She was used to taking what she wanted and getting it, not this constant game of cat and mouse. Her body was so tense with lust and desire that she felt like she was going to explode. She knew that she was so close to losing it that if he just looked at her with those hot intense eyes, she would cum.

She had to do something, and fast.

She opened her eyes and cursed under her breath...a date...humpf. More like an excuse to get away from her and building passions, and to get back her self-control that she felt slipping away. Jennie would bet her life that it had been Mino's idea, the interfering bastard. Sometimes he really pissed her off!

God she couldn't believe how obsessed she was becoming and how quickly. It was a little scary considering that usually she was the object of people's obsession, not the other way around. But she couldn't get Lisa out of her mind, every thought was of her, every desire in her body was to just wrap herself up in her and never let go. The urge to lick every inch of her muscled body reverberated through her every time she stood next her.

Feeling herself throb at the thought she angrily stood up and stepped out of the tub. This was it! She had had enough! No more playing Ms. Nice Girl, no more, I'll leave you alone shit...she wanted her, and she was going to take her, and she didn't care if she had to tie her up to do it.

***

Lisa quietly opened the front door and stepped inside to a darkened

hallway. Looking briefly around she noticed the whole floor was dark and quiet, and she blew out a sigh of relieve.

Lisa half expected Jennie to be here waiting for her to come home in some skimpy little nightie. An image that had stuck with her all night, an image that had ultimately lead her to taking her date home early. She just could not concentrate on anything else but Jennie and the fact that she was sleeping in the room next to her...it was too convenient, to tempting.

Lisa was perturbed by the whole situation. The fact that this seventeen your old imp was running her ragged was pissing her off. She had tried to enjoy her date, Nina was her name or something like that, she was pretty, and she was intelligent. She had rambled on about her job at some lawyer's firm or something, actually she had no clue what the hell she did or even what she had talked about. Her mind had been on one thing and one thing only...Jennie, Jennie wearing her pj's, Jennie playing in her pj's, Jennie taking off her pj's, Jennie's supple naked body spread out before her like a holiday feast.

Lisa took a step toward the stairs and hissed with pain. Leaning down she rubbed her shin. She could still feel the sharp pain of Mino's boot kicking her under the table, every time someone said something, and she didn't speak up quick enough. God, it had been a long evening, and she was glad to be home but she was also extremely apprehensive about being here.

Hesitantly she climbed the steps and made a left toward the wing of the mansion where her room was, surprisingly; feeling a little let down that she hadn't been waiting for her downstairs. Lisa knew she shouldn't feel that way, she was trouble with a capital P for prison, but she couldn't stop thinking about her, she couldn't stop wanting her and she was almost at the point where she didn't give a shit how old she was...she just wanted to fuck her.

Lisa was so mixed up she didn't know what to think in fact she couldn't think clearly at all. She was mad and horny, and she was mad that she was mad and horny. She wanted to wring her neck for making her this jumbled mess of emotions at the same time as she fucked her...hard and brutally.

Coming around the corner she was greeted with a vision that must have materialized from the darkest pits of her depraved mind.

Jennie stood in the soft glow of candles that lit the bathroom up in a warm almost fiery glow. Her hair was swept up haphazardly and little golden tendrils fell down around her shoulders that were bare. She had on a short silk purple robe that came down right above her knees. She stood on one leg with one foot on the edge of the tub, as her hands glided down her leg smoothing it with cream. Her robe was off her shoulders and wide open in the front as it swayed slightly from her actions.

The steam rolled out of the bathroom and into the hallway where Lisa stood encasing her in its humid warmth. She suddenly felt very powerful, as she stood there soaking her in. It was as if her thoughts of just a moment ago conjured her up for her pleasure...her personal pleasure slave, her for the taking...'

look at her...she's waiting for you...take her...take her now!'

Lisa hand lifted to loosening her shirt buttons. Slowly she took a step into the bathroom as she took off her jacket and rolled up her sleeves.

Lisa walked up behind her and grabbed her waist pulling her back against her. Her body shuttered as her hard cock pressed into her silky covered ass.

Jennie inhaled sharply and stilled her hands. She didn't have to look to know it was her instead she moaned at the feel of her pressed up against her and she pushed back, "Lisa...how was your date?" She asked.

She didn't say anything as her hands came up and rested on her back. She started to firmly rub her back up and down and Jennie couldn't help but purr contently, as her hips started to rotate against her hard shaft.

"My date? It was short...all I could do was think of you."

She laughed huskily, "Mmmm...so you're not much in the stamina

department, eh?" She teased.

Looking down Lisa watched her move as her hands grabbed Jennie's hips and she slammed against her hard, grunting as she did. Lisa sneered at her angrily, "So now on top of your shameful flirting and innuendos you're going to slight my manhood?"

She slammed into her again, making her shutter with lust... "Oh God...Lisa..."

"You like teasing me don't you...throwing your young tight body in my face." She slammed into her again.

Her hands went around her front, and she brutally gripped a naked breast squeezing it hard.

"Ohhhh..."

"You want me to fuck you don't you? You want my cock inside of you fucking you hard and fast!" She slammed into her again...violently tweaking her nipple.

"GOD yesss....." Jennie hissed in pain as her fingers continued to painfully pull and tug on her swollen nipples.

"You're always there...touching me...breathing on me, trying to get me take you, teasing me!" Lisa hissed at her, slamming into her once again.

"Yes!" she screamed.

Lisa grabbed a handful of her hair and yanked her head back, she leaned forward and spoke harshly in her ear, "Yes what?"

"Yes I want you...yes I want you inside me...please!" Jennie would whine and beg her all night if that was what it took for her to finally give in and take what she wanted, what she freely and anxiously wanted to give.

Hearing Jennie beg seemed to calm her, and she became aware of what she was doing. Lisa released her hair throwing her head forward. She was mad, she was fucking pissed off, and she felt like

a caged animal ready to snap. Lisa released her hips and step back from her.

Panting heavily, Jennie stood up and faced Lisa; her robe was opened revealing smooth expanse of tan skin and neatly trimmed hair.

Jennie watched Lisa emotions played across her face, from anger and lust to desperation and pain. When she spoke, she sounded lost.

"Why...why are you doing this to me?"

Tears came to her eyes as she took a step forward, "I'm not doing anything that we both don't want."

Lisa shook her head and started to back up out of the bathroom. "No, this isn't right, I can't do this."

Lisa turned away and started to briskly walk down the hallway. Jennie ran after her. She grabbed her by the arm and spun her around. "Don't walk away from me! Why isn't it right? Who says?"

"Because Jennie you're only seventeen...we talked about this already, remember, you agreed!"

"NO you talked, and I just went along. I don't agree...at all! I want you I know that you want me, why should age have anything to do with it? We're just two people Lisa..."

Jennie moved closer her hand coming up to rest on her chest. Her eyes were a bright green, and she was desperately beseeching her to understand that it wasn't a big deal.

"...we're just two people with natural feelings of desire for each other, why is that so bad...to express it, to explore those feelings...why?"

But Lisa was so stubborn; she shook her head sadly at her, "Because it's not right Jennie! I'm twelve years older than you! You're not even eighteen!" She shook her head again at her and she was ready to rip it off.

Jennie was angry now, she could not understand why she would not just let go, why she persisted in being this morally correct person. She stood back from and looked at her, "You've been talking to Mino."

"What?"

"Mino...he's the one that's telling you it's not right."

"No Jennie, that's not true."

"Yes, it is I know Mino."

Seeing a new angle to approach her with, Jennie smiled seductively at Lisa and rested her hand on the top her chest. She purred when she spoke next. "He's jealous you know...he's only saying that because he doesn't want you to have me...because he did."

Lisa eyes turned darker, a storm brewed behind them, but she didn't speak, she watched as she trailed her fingers between her breasts. "Did he tell you how he fucked me when I was fifteen? Did he tell you how he was inside of me, how he made me scream."

Lisa grabbed her angrily by the shoulders, growling she threw her up against the wall. "Shut up! I don't care about you and Mino! I just want you to stop this...this...game you're playing! I can't do it...I won't do it!"

Silent seconds ticked by as they stared into each other's eyes. Lisa held her strong up against the wall her body pressed into Jennie but she couldn't stop her eyes that slowly trailed down her body to her bare chest that heaved with every rapid breath she took. Her eyes seemed to smolder as they continued to look at her and her whole body burned from her heated gaze.

Jennie relaxed and moved her leg so that Lisa knee was in between her legs. She pressed down till her naked wetness was on her leg and she started to rub against her, enjoying the friction that her pants made on her throbbing clit.

Jennie started back her eyes a dark green her breath coming out in short pants, and Lisa watched her, riding her leg, and her own

breath began to pant as her leg pushed up into her on its own.

"I need you Lisa...I need you so bad. My body's on fire for you...please, just let us...be." She implored as she closed her eyes and started to ride faster.

Lisa hand lifted and sifted through Jennie hair as it fell all around her. She leaned forward and kissed Jennie gently on the lips, her heart breaking and her soul crying out for her. She was breathtaking in her inhibitions and she couldn't stop herself from telling her. "God...baby, you're so beautiful," she said in wonderment.

"Please Lisa...touch me...feel me...please, I beg you. Give into your desires." She huskily said still moving against her leg.

Lisa held her face in between her hands and they started into each other's eyes as she moved back and forth across her leg. "Jennie...I..."

Jennie couldn't stand to hear her denial again, so she pleaded once more, "No don't say it Lisa, please I ache so much...I need you...please..." She turned her head and kissed her palm, her tongue coming out and licking.

Jennie was starting to get frantic her body desperate for release and her actions not enough to give it to her. Her hand dropped down to Lisa crotch and started rub her hard cock up and down. Lisa closed her eyes and tried to hold on, tried to stay in control. But her breathless heady pleas were too much and in a split second he made a decision that would alter her life forever.

"Please Lis...."

"Shhh...baby...its okay...I'll take care of you." Her voice was like warm honey that coated her frazzled nerves and her body became lax as Lisa reached for her leg and lifted it up on to her waist. Her hand lowered to her neatly trimmed curls and then slid lower. When Lisa long strong fingers finally touched her aching clit, she hissed with pleasure... "Yes... please...make the pain the stop."

"Shhhh...just relax, just feel." Lisa whispered in her ear as her tongue came out and licked her down the expanse of her perfect neck. Reaching her pulse point Lisa drew it in between her teeth sucking on it as her fingers effortlessly slid across her wet lips circling her entrance.

Releasing her skin from her mouth she looked up at her closed eyes, "Look at me." Lisa said a little gruffly.

When her eyes opened and gazed adoringly back into her, Lisa slid three fingers inside of her.

"Oh yesss...." Jennie whined as she curled her index finger up and tickled her womb.

Pressing her palm down on her clit she pumped her fingers inside, always tickling her g-spot with her index finger, then pulling them out and doing it all over again. Never taking her eyes off of hers Lisa sped up, pressing harder, pumping faster. Jennie face was flushed with heated pleasure, her chest heaved with her rapid breath and she was getting lost in the sensuous picture that she presented, and the liquid heat that spiraled out of her and coating her fingers and hand.

"How does that feel baby, better?"

Lisa sexy voice filled her ears and Jennie increased her pace on her dick, rubbing faster and harder.

"Yes...sooo good Lisa...please faster...I need you so bad..."

"Shhh..." Lisa leaned down and kissed her slowly, her tongue licking her bottom lip then slipping inside of her mouth, Jennie latched on to it as if it were her saving grace, and she increased her pressure on her cock at the same time that her fingers fucked her faster and faster.

"Yesss...Lisa I'm soo close...so close...just a little more..." She whined.

"That's right baby...cum for me...let me feel your fire."

She was close so close, and she knew she was going to cum..."ohhhh...ohhh...yesssss.... yes..." She screeched.

"Daddy?"

Hearing Kathy Jennie threw her head back against the wall in frustration

'no not again, please!'

"Daddy?"

Lisa hand stilled, and that pinnacle peak of release faded before her eyes and before she knew what was happening, she was gone, and her skilled hands were not touching her anymore.

Jennie looked up at her...pleading her," Please Lisa don't go...don't leave me."

Lisa stepped back from her at the same time that she lifted her fingers to her mouth. Lisa lusty gaze stared back into her desperate one and savoring her honey juices as she sucked her fingers clean.

'oh god she tasted like perfection.'

The pitter-patter of little feet was heard coming around the corner. Kathy looked at them, "Daddy? Jennie? What's going on? "

Her eyes closed for one brief second as Lisa tried to control the timbre of her voice. Turning around to face her daughter she maneuvered her body to block the naked shaking form of her babysitter from her young eyes.

"What's a matter baby?" she shakily asked.

"I had another bad dream daddy?" She said softly.

Lisa walked over to her and picked her up, trying to calm her. "Shhh it's okay baby, daddy's here now, let's go back to your room and get you tucked in. We can talk about your dream there, okay?"

"Okay."

Kathy looked over Lisa's shoulder and looked at Jennie, who was plastered up against the wall, her eyes closed and her hands gripping her robe together.

"Is Jennie okay daddy? Did she have a bad dream too?" She quietly asked.

Lisa looked back at Jennie who now had her eyes opened and was desperately trying to pull herself together. She smiled at her, "No sweetie she's okay, daddy just scared her when daddy came up the stairs."

Kathy smiled slightly, "You did that to me too once daddy, remember?"

"Yes, I remember sweetie, come on let's get you back to bed."

Lisa looked back at Jennie, still standing there shakily, still breathing heavily, and she felt like a cad. "I'm sorry." She softly said she smiled tightly back at her, "Not half as much as I am."

Lisa turned away and headed toward Kathy's room, "Night Jennie."

"Night Kathy."

After they turned the corner Jennie ran to her room and closed the door. She fell on the bed and started to cry. She had never in her life felt as alone as she did in this moment.

She wanted her so much, she wanted everything about her, she was perfect, and she almost had her. Almost.

Ch 8

It had taken her an hour to get Kathy back to sleep. An hour of badgering her until she finally told what her dream had been about. It broke Lisa heart to learn that her nightmares consisted of her leaving and Kathy being left alone in a darkened room with a witch cackling at her, telling her that no one loved her and that everyone would always leave her.

Lisa hadn't realized the depths of her fears, she knew that they stemmed from her not remembering her mother and that her daddy was never home, but now hearing this just made her feel like shit...again. Lisa wanted to talk to her about her mother but she never felt like she was in the right frame of mind and she had no idea what to say. And to top off that feeling of fatherly ignorance was the underlying pent up sexual frustration that had her whole being strung out like a taut string.

Lisa had to do something because this was getting crazy and she could not allow Kathy to keep thinking and believing those things especially when they were not true. Morosely she made her way to her bedroom. Feeling something pull at her soul she stopped. She looked to the right and at the closed door. Jennie's room. She couldn't stop herself from walking to it; she placed her palms on the door and leaned her forehead against it.

God, she wanted her so much, wanted so badly to give in to her desires and take her. She realized that it was more than that; there was something about her that slipped into her heart and soul, something that made them both cry out for her. To hear the sound of her voice, to feel the touch of her hand, anything from her... she wanted it.

The way Jennie had looked at her, with passion and...love? Was that the hidden emotion she had read in her eyes? God, she didn't know anymore but a part of her wanted to believe that. Standing there at her door like a starving girl Lisa could feel her in the other

room and she desperately wanted to go to her and hold her. She wanted nothing more than to make love to her and talk to her about her troubles then the thought that maybe she was wrong, slipped into her mind.

Lisa remembered her words and what she said that it was just them...two people expressing their desires for each other, how could that be wrong? Now she started to wonder, how could that be wrong? Wasn't that a natural emotion and response? Maybe she was right that age didn't matter. Maybe all that did matter was finding someone in this world that you could relate to, someone whose soul fit perfectly into yours.

Maybe she was thinking about this whole situation wrong. Or maybe it was just her desperate craving for someone that she could talk to, someone that she could believe in again, someone that made her feel like a human again, and not some sheep who was being cuckolded. She didn't know how but that was what Jennie made her feel, like she was the opposite side of her soul.

Things were starting to make sense; Jennie was right...because she did want her, in more ways than one, and she wanted her, so who was to say that they couldn't enjoy each other's company? And as her Thai Parenting upbringing was screaming that having sex with her would be wrong but the devil on her shoulder was screaming back that there were plenty of things that they could do without actually having intercourse. Besides it wasn't like she was going to be seventeen forever!

"mmmm...."

Lisa heard her moaning through the thick wood of the door and her heart speed up. Her desire to just be with her and talk to her overrode everything else and her hand went to the doorknob slowly turning it.

Looking inside Lisa saw her lying on the bed, her tank top had ridden up and was bunched up under her breasts, the sheets were sitting low on her waist and her hand was gliding back and forth over her belly. Her eyes were closed and she was breathing rapidly when her head moved to the side and Jennie said her name in that

smooth husky tone that turned her body into an inferno, "Lisa..."

Lisa couldn't resist her call and she stepped inside the darkened room and closed the door. She walked over to the side of the bed and sat down, her hand coming up and caressing her hot face.

Jennie smiled and rubbed her cheek , "Lisa..." she mumbled as her eyes slowly opened.

Holding her gaze, Lisa leaned forward and gently kissed her. Jennie mouth automatically opened and her hand found its way into Lisa hair gripping . The kiss was not hot and demanding like the ones they shared in the hallway, this kiss was slow and sweet, an exploration into more than just a kiss, but an exploration of the heart and soul, and Jennie keenly felt the difference and her heart broke for her.

The kiss ended and Jennie cradled her head in her hands her eyes misty with unshed tears and when she spoke her voice was filled with love and concern. "What's wrong?"

Lisa smiled at Jennie but her smile did not reach her eyes. "Am I that easy to read?"

"For me...yes. Is it Kathy, is she okay?"

Lisa sighed as Jennie pulled her on to the bed, she gently pushed her head on to her chest as her hand rubbed Lisa's back.

Lisa closed her eyes and breathed in Jennie scent, she felt the erotic pull that being this close to her erupted in her body but she willed herself to remain still and calm, the need to talk to her more important in this moment then sampling her charms.

"I don't know what to do? What do I tell her? I can't tell her what her mother was really like! God she's having all these nightmares that no one loves her and that I'm going to leave her! I just...don't know what to do."

Lisa sounded so lost and confused and a tear fell from Jennie's eye and landed on Lisa beautiful brown hair. Jennie caressed her head then leaned down and kissed her. "Lisa, the only thing you can do is

just keep telling her that you love her. That's all she needs to hear, that and maybe spending a little more time with her. Deep down she knows that you love her, she's lonely and it's her loneliness that is creating her irrational fears."

"But what do I tell her about Carla? I can't let her keep thinking that she was a saint."

"Why not? Who is going to tell her anything different? She's only four Lisa, maybe one day when she's older you can talk to her about Carla, but right now all she needs to know is that her mommy loved her and that her daddy loves her and will always be there for her. Besides, she's pretty smart I think she already knows that there was not much love between you and Carla."

"I'm a terrible Dad."

"No, you are not terrible. You are just a woman that has had to deal with some unpleasant things and raise a child on your own. Now maybe you've made a few mistakes here and there, but really who hasn't. "

Jennie lifted Lisa's head so she could look into her eyes. "Lisa you are doing everything you can do and that is nothing to be ashamed of. And I think underneath all her fears and insecurities, Kathy knows that too...you just have to remind her." Jennie smiled and kissed her forehead lovingly.

Lisa stared into her gaze and felt her body pressed up against her, as she listened to her speak and listened to her heartbeat at the same time, it all seemed...natural, like this was where she was supposed to be and all of her reservations and uncertainties flew out the window.

"How is that you make everything seem better?" Lisa asked. Jennie was so young yet she held all the wisdom of an adult in that beautiful head and she was in awe of her.

Jennie smiled shyly "Is that what I'm doing? I thought it was just another shameless excuse to seduce you." She smirked.

Lisa laughed heartily at her sauciness and then she leaned forward and kissed her hard on the mouth. They kissed heatedly for several moments then Lisa pulled back, and not able to resist she leaned forward and placed a kiss on the corner of her mouth, then she leaned back and looked at her seriously, "We need to talk about this...us I mean."

"Ohhh so serious, should I be afraid?" Jennie teasingly asked.

That comment just made Lisa expression even more serious and she slapped her thigh playfully. "Don't be sassy." She said.

There was no mistaking the twinkle in her eye, "Owe...but you like me sassy." Jennie said as those lickable lips formed a sexy pout.

Lisa groaned as Jennie rubbed up against her and her cock twitched, not holding back her desires anymore, she placed her hand on her thigh and started to caress it. The look in her eyes was a mix of lust and pensiveness, and when she spoke her voice was quite serious. "I thought about what you said and you're right. Age doesn't matter; all that matters is that two people care about each other and want to express that. There's nothing wrong with that, it's a beautiful thing, and it's natural."

Lisa ground her lower half again, smiling sheepishly at Jennie as she moaned

"Plus I can't keep away from you anymore, I don't want to."

Jennie sexily smiled at Lisa and she ran her hand up her chest. "Thank God you finally came to your senses I don't know how much more of this cat and mouse game I could take. Now get undressed and come inside..."

Jennie went to move, but Lisa stop her, pressing her further into the mattress with the weight of her body.

"Lisa..." she moaned, "...you need your clothes off for this to really work."

Lisa smirked at her, "Jennie I don't think we should have sex..." She was about to argue when Lisa finger came up and silenced her,

"...yet."

Her eyes crossed, "What do you mean yet?"

She was so sexy Lisa had to resist the urge to shut up and just take her. It would be so easy to just pull her panties aside and slip into oblivion, but she was trying to set some guidelines here and she couldn't go back on them, even if they had been implemented yet. "Regardless of what I just said, I still am a little uncomfortable with the fact that you're so young. "

Jennie rolled her eyes "Lisa, I'm not a virgin." She said not realizing the violent feelings those words invoked in Lisa .

Lisa scowled darkly at her, "Thanks for the reminder."

Jennie had the good sense to blush at her blunder and her hand rose to Lisa eyebrows smoothing away their crinkled evidence of her displeasure. "I'm sorry I just mean that you don't have to worry about me, I'm not fragile, I won't break and I'm not going to run and tell on you..." she teased.

"I know that, Jennie. Look that's not the point, I guess what I'm trying to say is that it's not you it's me. I'm not ready to totally give into passion yet. There's still something screaming in me...I don't know maybe it's the parent in me I don't know, but whatever it is, its screaming at me that this is wrong, and it makes me feel like an old lecher for even being here talking about this. But I've realized that I can't stop wanting you and I can't keep pushing you away."

Lisa eyes darkened with lust, and his voice was gruff and hot, "But we can give each other pleasure for now, and when the time is right we can move forward."

Jennie smiled, okay, that's sounds like a good plan. All she had to do now was get Lisa naked and then she could just oh accidentally sheath herself on her.

"Give each other pleasure I like the sound of that." She purred as she let her hand wander stroked Lisa harden length.

Jennie wrapped her tongue around his and as they kissed their

hands skimmed areas that had been yearning for touch. She held tightly enjoying the pleasurable feeling of her weight on top of her, "God you feel so good." Jennie said as her hands splayed across the wide expanse of her silk covered back.

Needing to be closer still Jennie lifted her leg and wrapped it around Lisa waist pulling her even further against her aching core as she pressed up, she moaned as Lisa hard length rubbed against her clit.

Looking up at Jennie, Lisa touched her face, caressed her eyes then down to her nose and across her checks to her lips, Lisa rubbed her thumb across her lower lip, when she looked back up into her eyes, the depth of emotions that she read in them made her heart skip a beat.

"What have you done to me?" Lisa asked as she continued to stroke her face and hair, her voice filled with awe and bewilderment. "What is it about that you that pulls me to you? Why do I feel like you belong to me?"

Jennie eyes were moist with unshed tears of happiness and understanding; she lifted her hand and caressed Lisa's face. "I don't know but I know that I feel the same way. It's why I pushed you, why I kept pursuing you...I just wanted to be with you."

Lisa eyes darkened with passion and her hands started their trek down her luscious ripe body. "I want that too...more than anything." Their mouths melded together as if they were one, both taking and giving with lips and tongue and heart and soul, cherishing the taste of each other.

Lisa moved on to her cute little ear nipping at it gently and blowing in it lightly then she moved on and started to lavish her heated skin with wet open mouth kisses down her slim neck and chest. Lisa pulled Jennie shirt off and then sat back and looked at her beautiful breasts. "So beautiful." Lisa held them in her hands lovingly and pushed them up as she lowered her mouth. Lisa laved them with love and attention, suckling them and nipping at her nipples.

Jennie held Lisa head as she ran her leg up and down rubbing her

body against her. Lisa was fully dressed and the contrast of fabric sliding over her hot naked skin was almost unbearably exciting.

"Lisa, take your clothes off." She implored.

Lisa stopped nipping at the underside of her left breast and looked up at Jennie, her uncertainty of that move clearly evident on her face. "I don't know if that's a good idea, Jennie, at least not now...it's too soon, we're too needy, and I don't want to take the chance of slipping up."

'

Damn it, she must have read my mind.'

Jennie pouted, "Well, at least take your shirt off."

Lisa smirked, "That I can do."

Lisa sat up and went to unbutton her shirt, but Jennie sat up and swatted her hands away. "Let me."

Jennie was quick, and before Lisa knew it, Jennie had her shirt off, and her mouth securely latched on to her nipple sucking hard. Lisa shifted her hands through her hair, enjoying the sucking pressure of her mouth.

When Jennie hands went to Lisa belt buckle and started to unbuckle it, she pushed her hands away. "Jennie." Lisa warned her.

Jennie looked up all innocent, "what?"

Smirking at her, "No."

'Damn morals!'

Jennie thought as she pouted and batted her eyelids. She lowered her voice and tried another more seductive route, "But I want to taste you, I want to give you pleasure." She said as she licked Lisa nipple roughly and squeezed her cock.

"Ohhh Goddd..." Lisa hissed with pleasure trying to maintain some sort of control and stick to her guns. "I want that too...you have no idea how much, but not tonight." Suddenly she pushed her back down on the bed and spread her legs wide.

Jennie let out a surprised squeal landing back on the bed, she looked up with a hungry expression that clearly said...

'be rough...take me.'

"Tonight, I'm going to give you pleasure." Lisa looked down at her sopping curls and moaned, "Tonight I'm going to taste paradise." Without another word Lisa lowered her head to her beautiful moist core and latched on to her clit sucking lightly then drawing it into her mouth and tapping it quickly with her tongue.

"Ohhh...yeasss right there." Jennie whined as she brutally gripped Lisa head.

Releasing her nub, Lisa licked her from top to bottom and back and forth as her fingers spread her lips open. Lifting her hips up, Lisa moved her mouth lower circling her rosebud with her tongue as she pressed her thumb up inside her. Jennie jumped at the intrusion, and she became even wetter, this was something new for her and she was enjoying it immensely.

"Ohhhh...my god...Lisa..."

Lisa moaned as she continued to pleasure Jennie, her taste was exquisite and she couldn't get enough. She always loved giving women pleasure, the way she saw it was that if there was one thing in this world that did right, it should be this, so it was no surprise to her that she was getting as much pleasure out of it as she was.

What did strike her as different was the fact that doing it to Jennie felt like it was everything it should be. Not only was it erotic, pleasurable for Lisa as well as her, and something that she could do for hours, but it was also as if she could taste her soul, hear her heartbeat, she could almost taste the copper tang of her blood. It felt like the doorway to possess her and Lisa was a demon intent on possessing her.

Growling hungrily Lisa sped up, stiffening her tongue plunged in and out of her honey pot as her thumb continued to pump in and out of her rosebud. Lisa was a demon possessed...she had to have her...she had to make her cum...she had to taste her juices as they cascaded down her throat...and she wouldn't stop till she achieved that goal.

But Jennie was so wound up, so hot and horny that within minutes she was ready to explode, and she did, "Lisaaaaa!" she screamed as she brutally pushing Lisa face further into her heat, her legs convulsing as they squeezed her, her body shaking with the most explosive orgasm she had had in months, if ever.

"Oh...my...God...Lisa! That was incredible! I've never ever felt that way before!" she said in wonder with a smile as radiant as the sun on her contented face.

Lisa licked her clean then looked up at her and smiled smugly. She looked so...sated and satisfied that it made her feel like a God, like she held all the power of the world, it was a feeling that she didn't think she had ever felt before...definitely not with Carla and never with any of the other nameless women she had slept with. It was a titillating reaction because it made her wonder what she would feel like when she was finally inside of her, and she sent a silent prayer to God that she turns eighteen soon.

"You're so beautiful." Lisa reverently said as she stroked her belly.

Finally catching her breath Jennie looked down at Lisa with love in her eyes. Lisa chin was resting on her pubic bone and her fingers circled her bellybutton.

Jennie was amazed by the orgasmic gift Lisa had just given her, and that was what it was, a gift, an incredible gift of selflessness resulting in the ultimate pleasure for her, and she wanted to reciprocate and rock her world.

Jennie smoothed Lisa hair away from her sweaty forehead. "Let me give you pleasure Lisa please."

Lisa shook her head even though her body hummed with her words,

"No baby not tonight." She sat up and pulled the covers over Jennie. "It's late you need to sleep."

Jennie tried again, "But that's not fair." She reached out and squeezed her cock making Lisa squeeze her eyes shut and moan softly. "You haven't cum yet and I want to taste you."

'Oh god...don't say that word! I'm trying to do the right thing here!'

Gently Lisa pried her hand off and pushed her back onto the bed. "Temptress, please I'm trying to do the right thing here."

"No I'm trying to do the right thing here. " Jennie smirked back at Lisa.

"Jennie."

"Lisa" Jennie whined back.

They shared a smile then Lisa leaned down and kissed her on the lips tenderly, "Good night"

Lisa stood up turning away but Jennie grabbed her arm stopping her.

"Stay with me." Jennie asked as she took her hand and brought it up to her lips kissing her knuckles.

Watching her little tongue come out and lick, Lisa knew that was a very... very bad idea. "I don't think that's a good idea Jennie."

Jennie saw the resolve on Lisa face, and she knew she wouldn't budge. She understood everything that Lisa had said to her before, she didn't like it, but she understood. Besides there was plenty of time to bring her around.

"Okay." She begrudgingly agreed, ending it with another sexy pout meant to sizzle his brain...which it did.

Lisa leaned down and kissed her tenderly on the lips; her tongue came out and played with her lazily. "yummy" Jennie said.

Lisa laughed at her and started to walk toward the door. She stopped then turned around, "Jennie?"

"Yes my sweet Lisa."

Lisa rolled her eyes. "There's a carnival in town, how about tomorrow I come home early and I'll take you and Kathy to it, then we can have a picnic after." She asked a little nervously, unsure of what she would say.

But Jennie beamed at her excitingly and jumped out of the bed and flew into her arms. "Oh, Lisa that sounds wonderful! Kathy would love it, and I'd love to spend more time with the two of you." Jennie kissed her on the lips and then drew back, still smiling happily.

Smiling like an idiot he leaned down and kissed her again, "Good then it's a date."

"It's a date."

Still smiling, though now more carnally; Lisa smacked her firmly on the ass. "Now get back to bed." Lisa said as Jennie rubbed her sore derriere.

"Bossy"

Opening the door, Lisa stepped out into the hallway only to be stopped by her voice again. "Lisa?"

Lisa turned around, "Yeah"

"I...I really, really like you." Jennie shyly said making Lisa heart skip.

Lisa smiled at her lovingly, "I really like you too. Good night, Jennie."

"Goodnight Lisa."

Lisa closed the door and went to her room. She walked into the bathroom and ran the cold water; she didn't bother taking her clothes off she just stood under the water and counted to a hundred

in Thai.

Ch 9

Jennie lips wove a wet path down Lisa chest, stopping at a hardened nipple, her mouth covered it as her tongue swirled around, sucking Lisa's nipple further into the warm recesses of her mouth. Her nails raked down abandoned the nipple to continue her ardent exploration. Jennie licked her hard abs from side to side then moved lower still. Reaching bellybutton her tongue circled it slowly then dipped inside tickling the fine hairs that adorned it making Lisa giggle.

"Jennie."

Lisa hands sifted through her golden Hair massaging her scalp as she continued her ministrations. Jennie straddled her legs as she moved lower her beautiful sopping pussy rubbed Lisa knee and she had the strongest desire to lift her leg and lick it clean. Lisa felt Jennie hand wrap around her hard length strongly stroking and she moaned deeply.

"Jennie."

Jennie didn't answer instead she used her mouth for something better like wrapping it around her begging twitching shaft. Slowly she sucked as she bobbed her head up and down, milking with all she was worth. Jennie hand tickled her balls and her tongue swiped at the top of her head licking the precum that settled there. She moaned and the vibration rumbled through making Lisa even harder.

"Oh God Jennie...don't stop."

Jennie quickened her pace and sucked harder, relaxing the muscles in her jaw she deep throated her and felt the head of her cock hit her tonsils. Lisa jerked up into her mouth, feeling her balls tighten, knowing that she was about to cum. "Baby stop, I want to come inside you."

Jennie released her cock and looked up smiling. Licking her lips, Jennie straddled Lisa hips and positioned her at her entrance. Jennie sank down embedding her fully inside and they moaned in unison at the wholeness of their union.

Putting her hands on Jennie hips and start moving. Slowly at first, Jennie lifted herself up till Lisa cock was almost out then she sank back down embedding her deeply inside again. Again, they moaned as one. Leaning forward Jennie kiss her smoothly gliding them back and forth as she slowly lifted herself up again and then slowly sank back down.

Their kiss was languid like her movements and Lisa hands dug into her hips telling her without words to go faster and harder. She smiled knowing what Lisa wanted and increased her pace.

Jennie was riding her hard and fast and watched her possessively. Her body arched back as she leaned her hands on Lisa knees and threw her head back. Her breasts jiggled violently with her fast rocking and suddenly Lisa sat up wrapping her arms around and pulling Jennie chest up to her watering mouth.

Lisa mouth engulfed Jennie rosy nipple sucking ferociously as her hand trailed a path down her back and to the crevice of her ass, moving lower to where they were joined. Holding the base of her cock she lifted her finger up tickling her outer lips every time she slammed back down on her.

"So wet." Lisa said. Jennie juices coated her finger as she ran it along her lips and her shaft.

Jennie breathing became even more erratic and she grabbed her head brutally kissing her. She slammed down again and the bed started to rock...jumping up and down...jumping up and down...with her rough motion...jumping up and down....

"Daddy wake up!" Kathy screamed as she jumped up and down on the bed.

Lisa's eyes snapped open and she sat up quickly. Her breath was uneven as she scanned the room looking for Jennie. Turning lust

filled tired eyes to her energetic four-year-old, who was currently jumping up and down on her bed, it dawned on him. '

Ah? Oh God...not Jennie jumping up and down, Kathy. Fuck a dream, just a dream.'

Lying back against the pillows she pulled the covers up and over her massive hard on, she forced a smile to her face. "Hey what are you doing up this early sweet-pea?" She asked running a hand through her dishevelled hair.

"Jennie said we were going to the carnival today and I was so excited I wanted to come in and wake you. Jennie said it was okay. Is it okay Daddy?" She looked at her hopefully as she continued to jump up and down on the bed making Lisa's head spin.

With her mind in the gutter and lingering on her dream, it took her a minute to fully comprehend what she said. "Ah...yeah, it's okay sweetie. Where is Jennie?" '

And why isn't she taking care of you so I can continue with my sweet erotic dream?'

Kathy looked up at the ceiling wondering if she could touch it if she jumped high enough. She stretched her arms up and increased her jumping. Lisa inwardly moaned her actions rocked the bed and only fuelled her amorous desires. "Baby, please stop that. Where's Jennie?"

But she didn't. If anything, she jumped higher. "She's downstairs making brakefast."

"Breakfast." Lisa corrected her as she grabbed her robe and got out of bed.

"That's what I said Daddy!" Kathy irritatingly said stretching her little body as much as she could, trying to touch the ceiling.

She had the most adorable, determined face on and if it weren't for the persistent hard on that she was sporting she would have laughed at her. Instead, she scowled and grabbed her by the arms

lifting her off the bed. She scooted her toward the door smacking her lightly on the rump making her giggle. "Well, why don't you go downstairs and help her, show Jennie how daddy likes her coffee."

She giggled as she headed out the door, "Jennie said she already knows."

Her eyebrow rose, "She did, did she?"

"Yup."

"And how is that little miss know it all?" Lisa asked leaning down and tweaking her nose.

Kathy shrugged, "She said she just did." She started to walk down the hall, "Hurry up Daddy or your brakefast will be cold."

"Breakfast!" Lisa called out to her as she ran around the corner disappearing.

She closed the door and took a deep breath. 'Shower, cold, cold shower.'

***

Taking the steps two at time Lisa practically ran down the stairs feeling like she was seventeen again. She was so excited to see her, she could feel her heart beating furiously, her stomach felt like it was in knots and her hands were wet and clammy. After shower she had dressed quickly and then stood in front of the mirror brushing her hair. She almost dropped the brush at seeing the happy expectant face that started back. It was the face of young innocent love, not that of a shut-off cynic. She wasn't sure how to feel about all of the effervescent emotions flowing through her but she wasn't sorry and she wouldn't change a thing.

It was all so surreal; Jennie coming into her life, the whole scenario felt like it was either some sick and twisted porn movie or a family feel good Disney movie, either way it seemed like a very, very distant dream that was coming to life.

Lisa ran down the steps and the smell of coffee and eggs filtered

through her nose, she grinned like a helpless kid her entire being anticipating a day spent with her and her daughter.

"Morning" Lisa cheerfully said.

Jennie turned from the oven, a pan in one hand and a spatula in the other, a blinding smile on her face and her eyes lit with happiness.

"Morning" Jennie purred as her eyes travelled down her jean clad legs and black tee shirt.

Lisa smiled back at her and then let her own eyes wonder down her petite frame that was encased in a powder blue sundress. When Lisa eyes rose back to hers, she winked at her quickly then turned her attention to Kathy.

Jennie was shocked by her show of playfulness, but she held her surprise back and smiled warmly at Lisa.

"So baby you excited about today?" Lisa asked sitting down next to Kathy and pouring her more orange juice.

"Oh I can't wait Daddy! Do you have to go to work? Can't we just go to the carnival now?" she whined. She was so excited a whole day spent with her daddy and her new best friend. It was a luxury that she never had the pleasure of experiencing before and she didn't want to wait.

Jennie smiled at her, "Kathy I already told you that Daddy has to go to work and you have to help me prepare the picnic." She walked over to Lisa and placed a coffee cup down then proceeded to fill it. As she did, she leaned into Lisa and rested her hand on her back, slowly rubbing it up and down.

Kathy pouted and looked down at her plate playing with her eggs Jennie took advantage of her inattentiveness and leaned down to whisper in Lisa's ear. "Sleep well?" She asked huskily ending her question with her tongue dipping into Lisa's ear and kissing the rim, making Lisa close her eyes and shiver uncontrollably.

"Not particularly." She dryly said leaning into her touch.

She laughed warmly, "Neither did I." Jennie whispered again and kissed her check.

Standing up straight she walked over to Kathy. "So Kat what's your favourite Carnival ride?"

Kathy perked up at hearing this and turned to her excitingly, "Oh I like the roller coaster!"

"Kathy you're four years old you've never been on a roller coaster." Lisa smiled at her and sipped her coffee.

"That's not true daddy, I was on one in England."

Lisa looked sternly at her, "Kathy, don't lie. You have never been on a roller coaster."

She shook her head up and down, "Oh yes I have ask Uncle Mino!" She declared loudly annoyed that her daddy thought she was lying, until she realized what she said and what she had promised her Uncle Mino.

Her hand flew to her mouth and her big brown eyes bulged.

"Ah-Ha! I knew it!" Lisa said smugly all the while pointing a finger at her daughter, "I knew he lied!"

"What?" Jennie asked.

"Two months ago, we were in England visiting Rupert, that's Kathy' grandfather, I had some business to attend to and Mino took Kathy to the local amusement park. I told him no grown-up rides and he said no problem, mate." Jennie chuckled at Lisa good imitation of Mino.

"Don't be mad at Uncle Mino daddy, I made him take me on it." She turned to Jennie, "It was the coolest thing I ever done Jennie!"

"I bet it was sweetie, but roller coasters are for bigger kids and adults. How did you ever get on anyway, you're not that tall."

Kathy blushed, "Uncle Mino said if I wore big shoes that they would

never know the difference." She sneaked a peek at Lisa who was nodding her head up and down and mumbling something under her breath that she couldn't make out.

But apparently Jennie could, and she smacked her upside the head. "Watch your language" She scolded and Kathy waited with bated breath to see what her daddy would do. When Lisa just turned and grinned at Jennie then winked at her Kathy was shocked.

As they continued to stare at each other smiling, Kathy looked at her daddy a little closer and her brow furrowed. She seemed...different, more easy-going and lighter. She knew without a doubt that she had never seen anyone smack her daddy before without either getting hit back or yelled at, and she didn't know what to make of it.

"Are you okay daddy?" She asked quietly afraid that her daddy was ill.

Lisa never taking her eyes off of Jennie said, "I'm great baby."

Then suddenly she stood up and drank down the rest of her coffee. "Okay I better get going, I'll be back around noon and then we can go okay?"

"Okay Daddy." Kathy said warily still unsure of what was going on and if she was really talking to her daddy.

Lisa kissed her on the head and headed out of the kitchen.

"Eat your eggs sweetie." Jennie said as she followed Lisa to the hallway.

Lisa put her hand on the doorknob when she was grabbed from behind and spun around. Jennie pinned Lisa up against the door and plastered herself against her. She grabbed her head and before Lisa could protest her assault, she smashed her lips kissing Lisa hungrily.

Lisa smiled against her lips as she opened her mouth kissing her back eagerly.

"Mmmmm...you taste so good." Jennie said nipping at her bottom lip.

Lisa leered at her, grabbing her ass and pushing her into her growing erection. They continued to maul each other in the hallway when there was a crash of breaking glass and a small "oops" that came from the kitchen. They shared a knowing smile at what they both knew they would find in the kitchen.

Jennie pulled back her gaze somber. "Did you really sleep badly?" she asked concerned for her well being, she worked so hard, and she didn't want to be the cause of anymore stress.

'Whoa - hold up -since when do I care about stressing people out? That's what I live for, isn't it?'

Lisa smiled at her completely enthralled with her concern and attention. Lisa shook her head and looked at her with big sad puppy dog eyes, "I was plagued all night by a wicked naughty woman taking advantage of me in a most unladylike way."

Lisa eyes sparkled with mischief and Jennie was bowled over. She was teasing and she said woman. Does that mean that she didn't consider her a kid anymore? She smiled, this was a new and improved Lisa, someone who was willing to let go and relax a little, less stuffy and she liked it.

Jennie leaned in and kissed her, "That's your own fault you know, I didn't kick you out you left."

Lisa looked at her seriously, "I know, it's just the way it has to be...for now."

"For now." Jennie whispered.

"Jennie, I dropped my glass and there's orange juice all over my nice skirt!" Kathy yelled and they could hear the tears that hid behind her words.

Jennie sighed and kissed Lisa one last time. "Oh well, I'll see you later, twelve o'clock, right?" She stepped back from the door so she could open it. "Twelve o'clock"

They shared another heated gaze then Lisa turned and left.

"Jennie!" Kathy cried out again nearly in tears that her skirt was ruined.

Jennie sighing turned back to the kitchen," It's okay sweetie we'll find you another skirt to wear."

***

It was just another beautiful day in sunny California at least to everyone else, but for three people, it was the beginning of the best day of their lives, and the beginning of a new and improved life.

Kathy was happily riding the carousel, her hands up in the air waving ecstatically every time the carousal passed Lisa and Jennie, who stood at the gate watching her with smiles on their faces.

Lisa couldn't deny the happiness and contentment that had filled her soul. She knew that she had ever seen Kathy so happy and content, and she knew that she herself never did either. Lisa looked over to the woman standing next to her, her hand secretly tucked away on her arm; her eyes alit with love as she watched Kathy ride the carousel. Lisa knew she was the reason.

Jennie was a mystery, Lisa had never seen anyone as beautiful and full of life as her, and she was enchanted with everything about her and every little thing she did. But therein lie the mystery because she also could not believe that she was only seventeen. There was too much wisdom, too much emotional knowledge for a girl her age to have, but she did and it amazed Lisa.

Jennie feeling her warm chocolate gaze on her, she turned and smiled at Lisa. Jennie squeezed Lisa forearm lovingly, "Having a good time?"

Lisa just stared back at her as no words came to mind; she was just completely and utterly spellbound with her.

Jennie giggled and leaned in, "Hello Lisa?"

Lisa smile deepened, "I am."

They gazed into each other's eyes again, promises of heated kisses and forbidden touches filling their minds and turning their eyes two shades darker with lust.

Jennie adjusted her stance as she felt a pulse begin in her core. She breathed in deeply, her strong masculine scent filling her making her almost dizzy.

Jennie squeezed Lisa arm again, running fingernail lightly over her skin. "Good, me too."

She looked back over at Kathy who was laughing, "Kathy seems to be enjoying herself. You should do this more often."

Lisa turned her gaze to Kathy then back to Jennie, "WE should do this more often."

Jennie looked back, her eyes earnestly holding her, "WE should."

The ride ended and Kathy came running over to them. "That was great! Can I do it again, please, please, please?"

Lisa laughing picked her up, "Don't you want to try some other rides first?"

"Can I ride the roller coaster?" she asked hopefully. "Please daddy, you can go on with me, it will be lots of fun."

Lisa wasn't too sure about that; she hadn't been on a roller coaster since she was a kid and the only roller coaster, she wanted to ride was standing next her.

"I don't know baby, the roller coaster is too big for you."

"Look Lisa, there's a kid's roller coaster ride over there." Jennie pointed to the little Sesame Street ride that was going so slow that she wasn't even sure if it was moving at all.

Kathy turned and looked at it, her face crinkling with annoyance, "That's a kid's ride Jennie."

Jennie tweaked her nose, "Well believe it or not Kat, you are a kid."

She whispered.

Kathy huffed, "Alright."

Lisa put her down, "Okay Sesame Street ride it is."

"Guy's I'm going to get a drink I'll meet you there, do you want anything?" Jennie asked.

"No thank you. Come on Daddy!" Kathy started to pull on Lisa's hand.

"I'll take a Coke." Lisa said as she let her daughter drag her over to the ride.

"Okay one Coke coming up." Jennie turned and walked over to the concession stand and Lisa longingly watched her go, not wanting to be away from her for even a minute.

"Come on Daddy, it's starting again!" Kathy continued to tug on her hand.

"Okay, okay." She chuckled.

Jennie happily walked over to the concession stand.

"Can I help you little lady?"

"Two cokes please."

"You got it."

"Jennie? Jennie Kim?"

Turning around she looked right into the face of Parker Abrams and shuddered with disgust. He was a freshman at USC and a friend of one of her neighbours, she had no idea who, but he always seemed to be lurking around waiting for her.

She knew what kind of reputation she had and she knew that was the reason he was always around, he was trying to get into her pants. Mentally she snorted because that would never happen. He

was cute he had dark hair and really beautiful eyes, but there was something about him that made her skin crawl.

She turned away from him and paid the guy behind the counter, "Parker."

Parker leered at her, his eyes slowly traveling down her slight frame taking in every inch of her creamy tanned skin. He had been after her for a while now. The first time he saw her he was taken with her beauty but never thought to pursue it because she was just a kid in high school. But then he started to hear the rumors about how she dated older men, hung out at older clubs and would often go home with those older. That's when he really started to pursue her, if she was game so was he.

He stepped closer, touching her shoulder with his index finger he slowly trailed it down her arm, she shivered with revulsion, and Parker smirked at her thinking that he was winning her over.

"How you been Jennie? I haven't seen you hanging out lately."

She turned to look at him, her eyes hard slits. "I've been busy."

He continued to leer at her, his perverted mind going through a list of those 'busy' things she had been doing. He leaned in and breathed in her scent. "Jennie when are you going to stop this denial of our mutual attraction and start getting busy with me." He looked so sure and sounded so confident of his abilities to lure in women that she chuckled.

She tilted her head back to look at him, "Parker I think you're confusing revulsion with attraction."

"You can't fool me Jennie." He leaned in and nuzzled her neck his cock hardening at her scent. "I know you want me."

"Parker I want you as much as I want the bubonic plague." She shook him off and stepped back, "Now if you'll excuse me I have people waiting for me."

She turned and walked off, feeling his eyes stare into her back.

"Bitch." Parker sneered watching her walk away.

Jennie reached the Sesame Street ride just as Lisa and Kathy were getting off. "Hi guys have fun?" She asked handing Lisa his coke.

"It was otay." Kathy shrugged, her eyes glued to the big kids roller coaster ride that was currently going through a loop.

Lisa took her Coke from Jennie, "Making new friends?" she asked quietly but inside she was seething with pure rage. She was staring at her from her seat on the ride, it was really easy since the ride only went around a small track and up and down a few hills at a slow speed, so she had been happily watching her from afar when that punk walked up to her.

Lisa saw red as the good-looking boy leaned in and nuzzled her neck, as his fingers touched her golden skin. Lisa had gripped the sides of the car she was sitting in, getting ready to jump out and run over there and kick that punk's ass, but she was reminded that she wasn't alone when Kathy sighed heavily, also reminding her that she was not enjoying her ride.

Lisa was relieved when she walked away from him and headed back over to them. She felt somewhat better when she saw the cold look the boy had given her as she walked away; obviously she turned down whatever it was he offered. But Lisa still felt the need to protect what was her. She still wanted to rip that punk's finger off and shove it up his ass. Unfortunately at the same time, it also made her feel a little insecure, because it reminded her of their age difference and their strange relationship. 'Did they even have a relationship?' Lisa had no idea but she planned on finding out because she didn't share.

Jennie smiled, reading the jealousy behind Lisa words, "Him?" she looked back over her shoulder to see Parker standing with a bunch of his friends his eyes staring intently at her. "He's a boy." She turned back to Lisa leaning in she spoke in hushed tones, "I like you." She smiled then winked and turning her attention to Kathy.

Leaving Lisa to simmer with anger and lust. Her words, though simply said, were spoken low and hot, bringing her simmering

desire for her to the surface once again. While they calmed her inner rage slightly they really made her remember Mino's comment about Jennie liking older men and that made her wonder exactly how many older she had actually been with.

"Kathy are you hungry?"

"Yes." She answered her eyes still glued to the roller coaster ride.

Jennie turned back to Lisa, who was able to wipe away her frown before she saw it. "So picnic?"

"Sure."

***

It was six o'clock when they finally arrived back at the mansion. Lisa opened the door and Kathy skipped inside holding the pink teddy bear that she'd won for her, followed by Jennie and the purple teddy bear that she'd won for her. She was smiling as she closed the door in fact everyone was smiling.

"Can we watch Finding Nemo Daddy?" Kathy asked as she held her bear out in front of her and twirled him around.

Lisa looked at the clock on the wall, and then back to Kathy, 'This kid has too much energy.'

"Aren't you tired baby? Don't you want to take a nap?" Lisa asked hopefully.

"No I want to watch Finding Nemooooooooooo." She squealed spinning around faster and faster. "And I'm hungry."

"I'm a little hungry myself." Jennie said, "How about we order a pizza and then watch Finding Nemo?" She asked as she walked into the kitchen to put away the picnic basket.

Kathy practically ran after, "Yay...can we get meatballs and pepperoni on it?"

Lisa followed dumbly, wondering when she lost control over what

went on her house. 'Oh yeah it was the second Jennie walked in.'

"Sure sweetie meatballs and pepperoni it is. How 'bout you Lisa, how do you like your pizza?" She asked moving around the kitchen and putting things away as if it were her own.

"Whatever the ladies want is fine with me."

***

Two hours later, they were all nestled in the living room. The lights were off and Finding Nemo was playing on the TV. Kathy was lying on the floor, her head rested on a pillow, a blanket covered her, and she was lightly snoring. Jennie and Lisa sat on the couch a blanket over them as well. Lisa's arm was wrapped around her shoulders and she was cozily cuddled up against her.

"It was a great day Lisa, thank you." She whispered.

Smiling, Lisa leaned down kissed her head. "Thank you."

"For what?"

"For going with us, for being so great to Kathy...and me."

Jennie leaned back and looked at her, her hand came up and caressed her cheek, "You don't have to thank me you know. It's what I wanted to do."

Lisa gazed back at her, a thousand questions in her eyes. Jennie could see she was struggling with something and she could tell that she wasn't going to ask her. It wasn't hard to figure out that she rather brood about whatever it was than simply come out and ask her, but she couldn't let that happen, a brooding Lisa was an unhappy Lisa, and she liked her woman happy... 'Her woman? Yes, she was my woman!'

"What?" She whispered.

Silent seconds ticked by while she contemplated whether or not to ask her, 'fuck it!'

Lisa looked at Kathy still lying still on the floor and snoring, and whispered back, "Can I ask you something? Something personal?"

"Sure."

"Have you...umm...have you..." She was stuttering to get it, even though it was something she dreadfully wanted to know, she wasn't sure if she had the right to ask, and she didn't want to offend her.

"Lisa, you can ask me anything, I have nothing to hide." Jennie said.

Lisa cleared her throat and her voice was low and hushed, "Have you...been with a lot of guys?" As soon as it was out her eyes skirted back to Kathy and stayed there.

Okay this was it...the big question. Now personally Jennie felt no shame in her sexual experiences so far, not that she had many, but she never regretted them or felt shame. Yeah her reputation was a little tainted but she never cared before because she knew that the majority of that rep was based on bullshit. She knew the truth and so she never cared what anyone else thought.

But now lying here in Lisa's arms, her heart feeling more for her then just lust, she wondered if it would make a difference to her. Lisa seemed to have such strong moralities and she didn't want her thinking that she was a slut.

But better to learn that now than later when she really fell for her and she decided that she only wanted to fuck her cause she was easy. 'Was she looking for more from her than that?'

"Does that bother you?" She asked quietly.

Lisa looked back at her, "Honestly...yes, but not for the reasons you're thinking."

"What reasons am I thinking?"

"You're thinking that your answer will determine whether or not I think you're..."

"Easy?" Jennie answered for her.

Lisa nodded.

"And it doesn't?"

"No. It bothers me because..." Lisa ran a hand threw her hair trying to figure out if she should reveal the depths of her emotions. Would she laugh? Does Jennie only want sex and nothing else? Would she be opening her heart only to have her stomp on it?

"It bothers me not because it would make me think you're easy, but because I don't like the idea of other guys being with you." Lisa looked deep into her eyes, "I don't like the thought that other guys have touched you, that other guys have been to places that I want only me to go." There she said it was out in the open now, how she truly felt.

Jennie's hand rose to Lisa's cheek and her eyes misted with beginning tears of pleasure. "Lisa, I haven't been with a lot of people. Honestly, there was only one guy that I had sex with before Mino. I mean I've fooled around with people here and there but it never went any further. My reputation far exceeds the truth."

Lisa blew out a sigh of relief.

"And to hear you say that to me, makes me feel very special, like I...." Her breath hitched as tears fell from her eyes and down her cheek, "Like I belong to someone. And I never felt like that before...ever." Jennie was quietly crying and Lisa pulling her into her embrace.

Lisa's heart broke for her and the fact that even though she seemed worldly and mature Lisa realized that was just a facade. Inside there was still the heartbreaking weeping pain of a child looking for a family and love...just like Kathy.

"Shh baby, you have me...you'll always have me."

Jennie cried a little louder and wrapped her arms around nuzzling deep in her comfort. Lisa words had reminded her of how she never felt like she belonged and how for the past week she had been feeling nothing but that, and she didn't realize how afraid she was

that Lisa wouldn't feel the same way and take that away from her, just like her parents and brothers.

Lisa words though spoken with jealously and possessiveness, was really an assurance of her own unsure feelings and they only served to fill her heart with love and warmth. It was a bit overpowering for someone who always bottled her own pain up and she couldn't hold back her tears of happiness and relief.

Jennie leaning forward to kissed her tenderly and Lisa gave her free rein, sitting back and letting her lead the way. Jennie opened her mouth and covered her completely, her tongue slipping inside entreating her to play.

Lisa pulled her closer and their tongue duel madly and wildly. Jennie moved her mouth down to Lisa jawline; she kissed a path to her ear where she nipped hungrily on it then slipped her tongue inside. She blew in her ear lightly as her hands wandered up her chest and to her nipples squeezing them.

Lisa was a volcano ready to erupt, as Jennie continued to touch and feel her. Jennie hands slipped up her shirt and she pushed it up as Jennie lowered her head and latched on to her nipple.

There was a sudden noise on the TV, and Kathy stirred.

Lisa froze for a second and looked at her, she was still snoring, but she moved her head to the left. She was out cold. Lisa felt Jennie's hand graze her shaft and then unbutton her jeans. 'This couldn't be right?'

Lisa moved her hand, "Jennie stop."

"Shhh..." Jennie said as she sucked her nipple into her mouth and her hands batted her away. "You have to be quiet or you'll wake Kathy." Her hand snaked inside and pulled out her cock under the blanket, where she wasted no time. Jennie wrapped her hands around her wide girth and started to stroke Lisa strongly and slowly.

Jennie licked her way up, she whispered, "Just close your eyes and

feel baby. Feel my hand on your cock, moving up and down, squeezing you." Jennie squeezed her hard and then stroked her up and then down, her hand stopped and her finger reached down rubbing the sensitive spot at the base of her cock and the top of her balls.

"mmmm...but Kat..."

"Shhhh...quiet. I'm going to make you cum baby but you have to do it quietly." She smirked evilly at Lisa but she didn't see, she went back to licking her neck, as she relaxed back into the sofa, Lisa eyes closed her entire being centred around Jennie tongue on her neck and her strong hand on her cock.

Lisa sucked in her breath her hands shot out of the blanket and dug into the sofa has she fought to hold back her moan of pleasure.

But Jennie was a temptress, her Goddess, and she smiled against her neck then leaned up and whispered to Lisa, "God baby you're so big, so hard and smooth. I want to taste you so bad. I want to take you in my mouth and love you the way you should be loved." Jennie hand moved faster, her index finger circled her moist head.

"mmmm..."

"I want you to cum in my mouth. I want to feel your cum sliding down my throat." She purred as her hand sped up even faster.

"Oh God Jennie!" Lisa was going to cum she knew it. This was too much, her hand, her mouth, her hot words in her ear, with her daughter only five feet away. It was crazy! It was insane! It was wrong! It was also the most erotic experience in her live...the forbiddance of it, the complete and utter naughtiness of the whole scenario was too much.

Lisa grabbed her head brutally and slammed her mouth against Jennie, hard. As she came spurting her seed out on the blanket and on her hand, she moaned into Jennie mouth, muted but still thunderous.

After a few seconds of basking in a very pleasurable orgasm, Lisa

lay there still; her body relaxed, her mouth slightly agape as she breathed softly and evenly, a small smile playing across her lips.

Jennie nibbled at the corner of Lisa lips, her hand coming up from the blanket she lifted it to her mouth and watched Lisa as she licked her hand clean. "mmmmm, I knew you 'd taste delicious."

Lisa groaned watching her, getting hard again.

'Put child to sleep...take woman to bed...fuck her...fuck her...fuck her!'

RING...RING...RING

"Shit that's my phone." Jennie jumped up as Lisa reluctantly put her erection painfully back in her pants and zipped them up.

Kathy stirred on the floor the incessant ringing waking her... "Daddy?" she said groggily.

Lisa got up and walked over to her leaning down she patted her head. "I'm here baby."

Reaching over and grabbing her phone out of her bag, Jennie answered, "Hello?"

"Jennie! WHERE THE HELL HAVE YOU BEEN AND WHERE THE FUCK IS MY CAR!"

Jennie held the phone away from her ear so she couldn't go deaf from Riley's yelling.

"I WANT MY CAR BACK IN MY DRIVEWAY IN TEN MINUTES OR ELSE!"

"Alright, alright."

She hung up the phone and put it away.

"Problem?" Lisa asked as she continued to pet Kathy's hair.

Jennie stretched, and Lisa's mouth watered, as her hard nipples pressed up against the stretched fabric of her sundress.

She stood up and grabbed her things. "No, just Riley bitching about his car. I have to go."

Lisa stood up and taking her hand walked her over to the door. She leaned back against it and Lisa leaned forward her hands bracing against the door, effectively caging her in.

"Should I drive you?" Lisa asked, her mind not thinking of what she just said but rather on the hard nipples that she wanted to suck on.

She laughed softly. "No, I have to take the car home."

"Oh yeah." Lisa smiled at her then leaned in kissing her softly.

Jennie moved her hand around to her neck, caressing her jaw, feeling her muscles.

"You sure you're all right to drive?"

Lisa was sweet, so caring, and her heart swelled with love. "I'm sure."

Lisa didn't want her to go; she just wanted to take her upstairs and show her how much she cared about her. She wanted to be inside of her so bad that she would have gone back on her word and taken her. If Jennie knew what she was thinking she wouldn't have left and, in all likelihood would have raced her upstairs.

Lisa stepped back and opened the door for her.

Jennie stepped outside and looked back at Lisa, the love in her eyes was there for her to see, "I'll see you tomorrow?"

"You better." Lisa said possessively and seriously, her eyes dark and solemn.

Jennie giggled, "Sleep tight."

Jennie waved and ran down the driveway hoping in her car and driving away.

Lisa closed the door and leaned her forehead against the wood, her

soul and heart missing her already.

"Daddy? Where did Jennie go?" A voice groggy with sleep said from behind.

She turned to her and picked her up, heading upstairs. "Jennie had to go home baby, but she'll be back tomorrow."

"I don't like it when she leaves us daddy." Kathy whispered as her eyes closed and she fell back asleep.

"Me either baby." Lisa sighed.

Ch 10

The next morning Jennie woke up to the sound of her phone ringing. Grabbing the phone quickly to stop the annoying sound, she picked it up being her usual early morning curt self. "What?"

"Hi Jennie."

Her eyes popped open, "Kathy?"

"Ah-ha, when you coming over?" Kathy was so excited she couldn't wait to see her. She couldn't stop thinking about yesterday and how she spent the whole day with her Daddy. She knew that it was Jennie's doing because her Daddy never did that before Jennie showed up. She was sad when Jennie left last night and she decided that she never wanted her to leave again.

Jennie sat up and looked at the clock, 'its seven o'clock in the freaking morning on a Sunday, doesn't this kid ever sleep?'

"Ah sweetie it's a little early, what are you doing up?"

"I'm always up this early Jennie. When you coming over?"

'God I didn't know a person could be this chipper in the morning.' She was annoyed at being waken so early, but Kathy was just too cute to stay angry with. She softly chuckled in the phone, "Where's your daddy?" She asked thoughts of him immediately entering her mind.

"Uncle Mino came over and picked daddy up they went to look at a house Uncle Mino wants to buy."

Her brow furrowed, "He's not home?"

"No."

"Then' who's watching you?"

"Mrs. McCann. She's our housekeeper."

Jennie sighed and ran a hand through her sleep-ridden hair. "Well, I don't know sweetie I have some things that I should really take care of today."

"Oh." She sounded sad, and then she added, "Jennie?"

"Yeah?"

"It's going to be really hot today."

"I suppose so." Jennie yawned.

"We have a pool you know."

Jennie smiled into the phone, the kid was a player, smooth and confident.

"You do, do you?"

"Yup."

Jennie laughed and gave in, "Okay Kat, you win, I guess I could come over later."

"Really, what time? Soon?"

Sitting up Jennie looked at the calendar on the wall and noticing the date, she cursed under her breath. "Oh sweetie I don't know if I can come, I'm supposed to meet my friends for lunch today."

"Oh...they can come too, please Jennie." Kathy said.

Jennie thought about it and in a blink of an eye decided to go. Mostly because she really wanted to see both Kathy and Lisa and of course it was the perfect opportunity to torture her a little, but mainly it was because she wanted Rosé and Alex to meet them and vice versa. She figured that if she was ever going to get Lisa use to the idea of them being a couple then there was no better time than now.

'A couple...is that what I want?' The thought made her all warm and gooey inside like melted chocolate chips in a baking cookie, 'Yes that is what I want. I want a relationship with her, I want her to be mine, and me to be her, I want her and only her to have my warm gooey center.'

"Okay Kat, I just have a few things to do, and then we'll come over, around one o'clock...okay?"

She heard Kathy jumping up and down, "YAY. I can't wait to see you Jennie."

Jennie smiled, "Me too honey I'll see you later okay...bye."

"Bye Jennie."

Jennie hung up the phone and got out of bed. She had a lot to do today before then so she better get started, lucky for her that Riley wasn't home; he pulled the early bird shift on Sunday mornings at the base and so he wouldn't be here to bother her...thank god.

'Okay...coffee, laundry, and shower, then call Rosé.'

***

"So?" Mino asked as they drove back from Venice Beach.

"So what?" Lisa answered, knowing what he was asking but refusing to give in.

Mino guffawed, "you know what?"

When Lisa remained silent staring out the window, he continued, "Jennie...the little blonde seductress that's been trying to get in your pants."

'And succeeded quite successfully.' Lisa thought a smirk playing over her lips, but her answer was cool almost bored. "What about her?"

Mino smacked the steering wheel, "Come on mate I'm your bro spit it out!"

"What do you mean?" Lisa smiled enjoying Mino's agitation; it wasn't often that he got to do that; usually it was the other way around.

Mino rolled his eyes, "Yeah, yeah you can play dumb all you want, but I know Jennie and I know you, and I know that something's going on and I want to know what." He demanded.

Lisa sighed. She turned to look at him, "we've come to an arrangement."

"What kind of arrangement?" Mino asked suspiciously.

"Without going into all the details, basically, we're going to...date, until she turns eighteen." There she said it.

"Date?" Mino laughed, and Lisa frowned.

"What are we twelve? Date! Alright I'll go along with that if it makes you feel better." Lisa scowled at him.

"Okay, so what you're really saying is that you two crazy kids are going to fool around; a little first, a little second and a little bit of third bases, with no home run follow ups?" he said chuckling and shaking his head.

"What's wrong with that?" Lisa said perturbed it didn't sound crazy 'yes it did'.

"What's wrong with that? I can't believe you even have to ask that." He looked over at her and saw the bewilderment on her face. "Lisa, when was the last time you hit a home run?"

Lisa turned away embarrassed, "I don't know."

"Yeah well I do, it was...let me see what was her name, oh I know, Eve. Eve from that brokerage firm, you two went out on a date and she got you drunk and seduced you. That was what? Six month's ago?"

Lisa turned back to him, "She didn't seduce me, I seduced her!"

"Yeah right, that's why the next morning you had no idea what happened. She slipped you a roofie brother don't be embarrassed. It happens to the best of us."

"What's your point?" She said tiredly.

"My point is that you haven't shot your load off, with another person that is, in six months, and you don't even remember that time."

"So."

"So...so...do you really think that you'll be able to not bat for a homer when you're...dating...Jennie?"

"I do have self control you know."

Mino laughed, "Lalisa, self control is one thing...masochism is another. For God's sake...just take her already."

"What happened to keeping it in my pants?" Lisa asked.

Mino shrugged, "Well I've been thinking the matter over and I've changed my mind."

Lisa shifted in her seat turning her eyes once again out the window. "Yeah well I haven't."

Mino looked over at her, stubborn as usual. "Suit yourself."

Pulling up into the driveway Mino slammed on the brakes just as he bumped Riley's bumper. "Oops." He smiled happily as Lisa frowned at him.

"Why does he let her drive this piece of shit?" Lisa asked as she kicked away the rust that had fallen off from Mino hitting it.

"Because he's an asshole." Mino matter-of-factly answered. "Do you hear that?"

Lisa cocked her head to the left, she did hear it...music and laughter, coming from her backyard. She walked around and

headed to the back with Mino in tow.

They rounded the hedge and opened the gate and Lisa stopped every bone in her body tensed tenfold. Her favourite fantasy was before her again,Jennie bent over picking up a towel on the ground. She had on a fire-red bathing suit with a thong bottom and Lisa's eyes were glued to her tight little ass, as her fantasy played out.

Staring at her Lisa wondered, why she had this obsession with Jennie's ass and that particular position. Probably because it was the most dominant sexual position and she already knew that she had an unhealthy fixation with wanting to dominate her.

Mino took a moment to admire Jennie's ass too before turning to Lisa. Seeing the look of raw sexual need in her eyes and the hard set of her jaw, he smirked, "Self-control, yeah good luck with that."

Dismissing Lisa, he walked over to the pool. "What's this, a party and Uncle Mino wasn't invited?"

Noticing for the first time that she was not alone, Lisa slowly followed, trepidation filling him, '

who the hell are these people and what are they doing in my pool?'

Mino startled Jennie and she jumped dropping the towel she had just picked up. "Mino you scared me." She bent over again to grab it.

Lisa's eyes bee lined straight to her ass again but were waylaid when she got the distinct feeling that there was someone else ogling her prize. She scanned the pool her eyes immediately landing on the boy leaning against the side of the pool, his eyes glued to Jennie. Lisa growled softly.

"Look at me Uncle Mino I'm in the water!" Kathy sat in a tube her little arms waving around all excitingly.

Mino chuckled, "I see that pet."

He looked at Lisa, "The kid's first time in the pool Lisa, geez you're

pathetic."

With no answer from Lisa except the soft growling and the tension that was quite evident in her posture, Mino looked back at the pool and the people in it. '

Okay that explains the 'I'm going to kill you stance.'

"And what do we have here...Red and the boy wonder." He said taking a cigarette out and lighting it, smirking at Alex. He really disliked that boy. Partly because he always knew the kid had the hots for Jennie and Mino knew that Jennie didn't reciprocate it, so he was always on the alert for some unwanted attention Alex might try that Mino could kick his ass for.

He took a drag of his butt, '

Ah...who the hell am I kidding he just annoys the hell out of me. Any chance I get to hurt him, I'll take it.'

Seeing how Lisa didn't seem to be too smitten with the boy either he felt a little disappointed,

'he's going to beat me too it...damn, well I can always watch that would be fun.'

"Hi Mino." Rosé said as she floated in the water by Kathy.

"Ah it's Mr. Peroxide himself." Alex said.

Jennie ignored everyone else her soul and heart drawn to Lisa and the memories of last night that swarmed her. Slowly she walked over to her, she was hesitant, she could see the tension in her body and her eyes spoke about an underlying violence.

'I guess I chose the right bathing suit.'

She smiled to herself.

Jennie slinked up to Lisa and lowered her voice so it was that smooth husky tone, the one that was intended to fire her senses and

make her think of nothing else but her. Standing close next to Lisa, she leaned in purposely positioning herself so her hand could sneak around and rub her back.

Lisa nose caught her scent and her eyes were drawn to her immediately, changing from violence to lust.

"I'm sorry Lisa; Kathy called me this morning and asked me to come over to swim in the pool. I had plans with Rosé and Alex, but she invited them too, I hope that's okay." She looked up batting her eyes and giving Lisa that pleading pout.

Lisa body was tense with violence and lust; her smile was heated yet grated, as the potent mixture simmered at the surface. The desire to cover her from prying eyes was second only to the desire to threw her on the ground and take her there in front of everyone, marking her territory.

Her hands clenched at her side, her nails digging into her palms, her voice was low and harsh. "Yeah..." Lisa blackened eyes seared her to the core. The lust and violence filled every single pore on her body; Jennie raked her nails down her back, hard, her body on fire for Lisa possession. "No problem." Lisa hissed feeling the scrapes from her nails that were no doubt now on her back.

Jennie smiled then rubbed her back, soothing her. Unable to resist she leaned in and whispered for her ears only, "You're so sexy when you scowl."

Lisa growled hungrily at her.

"Come and meet my friends." Jennie purred.

Reminding her once again that they were not alone, she scowled and tried to protest, "Jennie I don't think..."

"Don't think." She grabbed Lisa by the arm and dragged her over to the pool.

"Guys this is Kathy's Dad, Lisa. Lisa this is Rosé and Alex."

"Red and putz for short Lalisa." Mino said while Alex glared at him.

Lisa put her hands in her pockets, "Hello."

A slight shiver of fear ran down Rosé's spine at her curt hello. Lisa didn't seem to be happy about them being here but she also sensed that there was something else bothering her. Regardless, she could easily see what attracted Jennie to Lisa. She was tall, gorgeous and had a body to drool over.

Although she wasn't sure she agreed with the whole thing, she knew one thing and that was that her friend had changed in the last week. She seemed to be more directed, more grounded, and if this woman and her daughter had anything to do with it, then she was all for it.

"You have a beautiful home, Lisa." She shyly said.

After receiving a jarring elbow in her side from Jennie, she smiled at her, "Thank you Rosé."

"Yeah you must bring home the big bucks." Alex replied only to have water kicked in his face from Jennie.

"Hey!"

Jennie ignored him and turned to Lisa, "We were going to have some hot dogs and hamburgers do you guys want some?"

"Ummm...no thanks, we have some paperwork to go over. Mino bought a house."

Jennie turned to Mino, "That's great Mino...finally ah, no more dingy apartment. Congratulations." She kissed him on the cheek.

"Thank you pet, it's been a long time coming."

"Oh I don't know Mino, I think the crypt-apartment suited you perfectly, it went with all those skanky ho's you'd pick up." Alex sneered at him, and then he was hit in the face with a splash of water again, this time by Kathy.

"Hey!"

She waved her little fist in the air at him, "You be nice to my Uncle Mino or you can get out of my pool!" She warned him.

"You tell him pet!" Mino said grinning at the audacity of his niece, '

God he loved this kid!'

Lisa scowled at her. She didn't like him either, but she didn't raise her to be rude. "Kathy that's not nice."

"Oh don't worry about it, Alex's heard a lot worse." Jennie chuckled.

The whole scene was making Lisa uncomfortable, she had to get out of here, "Mino let's go." She walked away toward the house without sparing her another glance.

"Friendly guy Jen." Alex said.

"Shut up Alex." Watching Lisa walk away with stiff angry strides, Jennie sighed heavily.

***

Lisa sat at her desk in the library at the back of the house, a whiskey in her hand, her eyes peeled to the petite blonde that lay outside soaking in the sun.

After Mino left she contemplated going outside but decided not to. She just did not feel comfortable hanging out with her friends. Of course, she could stop torturing herself and move to the front of the house, where she couldn't see her but then she couldn't watch Alex either.

Lisa drank her whiskey and poured another glass all the while watching her. The more she did the harder she got, and the more she watched that boy ogle her, talk to her and touch her, the more hostility she felt.

God Jennie was so beautiful, so sexy. Her hair was pinned up haphazardly, she lay there with her eyes closed, her head tilted back, she had one knee bent and her foot was tapping to the music blaring out of the stereo.

Lisa's eyes scanned over her face and down her slim neck. Down to her breasts that were practically spilling out of the sides of that little dinky triangle top she wore. Her flat belly glistened under the sun's rays like beacon to her darkened desires. Lisa's eyes moved lower to that indecent thong she wore and the neat trimmed curls she knew were under it.

She drank down the whiskey and poured another, her eyes still on that spot, the most amazing place on this earth...her passion, her obsession, her prize for sticking with her morals, and ultimately her home.

She growled loudly as Alex leaned down and said something in her ear making her giggle, "fucking punk!" she snarled then drank down her whiskey and poured another.

Alex moved away and Lisa's eyes followed him, angrily. "Have you been to my home boy?" she sipped her whiskey. "Have you sampled my woman?" she sipped some more and her eyes automatically roamed back over to Jennie, "Was he one of them love?" she quietly said, hoping to god that she wasn't.

Lisa was completely consumed by the violent lust she was feeling, darkness was taking control and the devil on her shoulder prodded her to act.

'Just take her! She's yours! Look at that boy watching her, coveting her! He wants to touch her he wants to slip his little cock inside of her!'

She harrumphed and drank some more whiskey.

'You're not going to allow that are you? You're not going to allow his slimy hands to roam her beautiful body, are you?'

Suddenly she stood up slamming the rest of her whiskey down. "No...I'm not."

Her stride was purposeful and determined as she walked over to the intercom on the wall. Pressing the button she spoke into it, "Jennie can you come in here, NOW!" She screamed.

Jennie felt her heated eyes on her the whole time and she was just

about to make some excuse and go inside to see what Lisa was up too. Instead, she jumped clear off her seat at hearing her voice come out of nowhere and a very unpleasant angry voice at that. "Where the hell did that come from?"

"The intercom." Kathy pointed to the little box on the wall then returned her attention to Rosé, who threw a volleyball at her.

"I'll be right back guys watch Kathy."

Grabbing her towel but not bothering to put it on she walked into the house, dragging it behind her. It was cool inside and she shivered as little goosebumps appeared on her arms.

Turning the corner she opened the door to the library and peaked inside, "Lisa? You in here?"

Lisa's hand shot out from behind the door, grabbing her arm and pulling her inside. She slammed the door shut and threw her up against the wall face first. She pressed against her and leaned in, "Nice suit." She sneered.

Jennie heard the zipper of her jeans being lowered she heard the shuffle of fabric being pushed down and then she felt her hands pulling her thong off and she smiled. Finally...finally she was going to get what she wanted! She had finally succeeded in pushing her over the edge! '

Thank you Alex!'

She closed her eyes as she felt Lisa velvety cock slide across her wet lips. She pushed back trying to catch the head and push herself fully on Lisa, but she wouldn't let her. Lisa's hands dug into her hips painfully holding her still, not allowing her to move.

Jennie panted into wall as she gave her the control she demanded and she waited to feel Lisa inside of her. But that never happened. Instead, she moved faster, her hips pistonning back and forth, her hard cock slipping between her lips over and over again.

"Mine." Lisa said her movements erratic and jerky in her violent

lust. She was where she wanted to be but not where she wanted to be. It was completely frustrating. She wanted to fuck her, she wanted to ram inside of her so she knew whom she belonged too, but she still felt like she couldn't.

"Lisaaaaa...so good...feels sooooo good!" Jennie whined, and it did, the way her silky hard shaft slid back and forth over her wet pussy was the most erotic sensation that she ever felt. It was a new experience for her, having sex but not really having sex. She never would have thought that she could get this hot without Lisa actually being inside of her. But she was, her whole body was on fire and her clit throbbed angrily every time the head of her cock slipped over it, teasing it harshly. The only thing that could top this sensual play was getting her to slip her cock fully inside of her hot pussy. So, she tried.

"Please Lisa, come inside...I have to feel you inside of me...please!" She pleaded.

Lisa steeled herself to ignore her hot and sultry pleas, pleas meant to drive her insane, meant to drive her over the edge. She knew what she was about and if she was a lesser woman, she would have listened to her siren's call. But she wasn't and instead her hand left her hip ripping her top to the side and roughly squeezing her breast.

"GOD...PLEASE!!!" She whined again, bucking her hips back into Lisa.

Lisa continued to ignore her pleas, she continued to fuck her, her dick moving fast between her aching lips but never slipping inside.

She grunted loudly. It would be so easy...so easy to reach paradise, to take her prize but her conviction to not take her held out over the lust, over the need to possess her.

Lisa slammed against her again the mushroom head of her cock running over her clit, she arched back, her head slammed back into her shoulder and she screamed as she came. "Lisa!"

She grunted again her only acknowledgement of Jennie orgasm,

feeling her creamy cum coat her cock she tweaked her nipple and bit her neck, slamming against her once more then cumming hard, her seed shooting out between her legs and on the door.

Her hips slowed as Lisa gradually came down from her orgasmic high. Jennie's hand snaked up to her head and pulled Lisa down to her mouth. She slipped her tongue inside and kissed Lisa tenderly.

"mmmm" Jennie nipped her lips as her eyes opened to Lisa chocolate gaze.

She smiled sheepishly at her, "Sorry."

She smirked at Lisa, "No you're not."

Lisa smirked back; her eyes filled with contented pride.

Lisa kissed her one more time then stepped back and pulled up her pants as Jennie straighten out her top and pulled on her thong. Then she moved up to Lisa and wrapped her arms around Lisa's neck. "So I guess you like my suit, eh?"

She leaned back, her eyes roaming down her body; she smiled appreciatively, "Yes I do."

Then Lisa's eyes hardened and she pulled her closer, "and so does Alex." She snarled, the possessive anger returning now that her lust had been sated, sort of.

Jennie smiled knowingly, "Oh so this was you marking your territory?"

Lisa smirked then leaned forward and took a big whiff; smelling sex, smelling her...it was a good smell. "I'd say I did a good job."

Jennie laughed softly, and then looked at her seriously. "Lisa, you know I've never been with him, right?"

"I know." No, Lisa hadn't known but she did now and she felt somewhat better or maybe it was just the release she had that calmed really, she didn't care. All she cared about was that

'she smelt like me and I smelt like her',

it was the way it was supposed to be. The way it would be again...soon.

They kissed softly again then Jennie pulled back and out of her embrace. "I should get back outside and make sure that Kathy didn't kill Alex."

Jennie walked toward the door her movement slinky and sexy once again and her eyes followed hungrily...again.

'Shit will I never get enough of her?'

She opened the door and turned around, "she doesn't like him either...go figure, like father like daughter." She giggled and blew her a kiss, softly closing the door behind her.

"Smart kid." Lisa proudly said.

***

Two hours later the back door was thrown open and Kathy ran inside her little wet feet making prints on the marbled floor.

Lisa came out of the library, "hey, hey what happened to drying off your feet before you slosh water in my house." She yelled at her as she ran upstairs.

"Sorry Daddy, I have to get changed. Jennie said I'm a prune." She was so happy she didn't bother waiting for her response she just ran all the way up the stairs and disappeared.

Lisa chuckled.

"Hey." The soft voice said from behind her.

Lisa turned and was hit once again with her beauty as she leaned against the door, her eyes holding her with love and passion

"Hey"

They shared a knowing smile and Lisa put her hands in her pockets so she wouldn't reach out and grab her.

Jennie walked over to Lisa; "I'm going to drive Rosé and Alex home. And then I was thinking that I'd like to come back, and...talk."

Lisa looked at her Jennie looked serious. "Talk as in talk, talk, or...talk?" She wiggled her eyebrows at her, and she laughed.

"Lisa. I'm serious."

"Oh, serious Jennie," Lisa stood up straight and stuck her hand out. "I don't believe we've met, I'm Lalisa."

Jennie laughed wholeheartedly and smacked Lisa on the chest. Quickly she grabbed her hand before she could pull away and she pulled her in. Lisa leaned down and kissed her softly then moved to her jaw and down her neck then back up to her ear. "You're so beautiful, so sexy...I can't get enough of you." She nipped her ear.

Jennie giggled, "The feelings mutual." She squeezed her ass pushing Lisa further into her.

Lisa growled, "Vixen."

Hearing the horn blaring outside, she sighed and pulled back, her expression serious again, "Lisa, I'm serious, I'd like to come back and talk to you if that's okay."

Lisa lifted her hand and kissed it hotly, her tongue swirling on the back of it. She leered at her, "I await your return milady."

Jennie shook her head at Lisa silliness and turned and walked toward the door. Opening it, she turned around again, "I'll see you in about an hour."

***

An hour later Lisa was pacing in the hallway waiting for her to come back when the phone rang.

"Hello"

"Hi"

"Hey where are you?" Lisa asked sitting down on the stairs.

Jennie sighed, "I'm home. I'm not going to be able to come over tonight."

Her brow crinkled, "Everything alright?"

"No...yeah, it's just Riley. One of my teachers called Friday about a test I failed and he's on a rampage. He wants me to stay in and do my homework like a good girl."

"Oh." Lisa said disappointingly. "Well, he does have a point, school is important Jennie." She hoped she wasn't the reason for her failing grade.

"No, you're not the reason for me failing that test. I was failing way before I met you." She chuckled.

Lisa smiled, "How do you do that?"

"Do what?"

"Know what I'm thinking?"

She shrugged, "I don't know, I just do."

There were a few minutes of silence; "I'm going to miss you tonight." Jennie said softly cradling the phone close as if Lisa was there.

"Me too."

"Lisa, I wanted to talk to you about..."

"Jennie...." Bang, bang, bang, "Are you on the phone? Didn't I tell you no phone till you did your homework?"

Lisa heard Riley yelling in the background and then she smiled at Jennie's response. "Yeah, yeah all right already, leave me alone!"

"Sorry, he's an asshole."

Lisa chuckled, "So I keep hearing."

She smiled, "Well I guess I'll see you tomorrow and we can talk then, okay?"

"Okay. Jennie?"

"Yeah?"

"I'm going to miss you too, tonight."

Her heart fluttered and her soul sang. "Goodnight Lisa." She sweetly said.

"Goodnight Jennie."

Jennie hung up the phone and settled back against her pillows. She closed her eyes and went over what she wanted to say to him tomorrow. This could be the biggest conversation of her life and she wanted to make sure that she came off sounding sure and confident, and not like some stupid little kid.

To Jennie, Lisa was the beginning of her real life and she didn't want to fuck it up. Tomorrow, she would sit down and tell her straight out that they were couple and that was that.

Ch 11

!! Warning Sexual harassment and violence Scene**!!**

'I'm just going to sit her down and say Lisa, I really, really like you, and I know that you really, really like me,' Jennie smirked there was no doubt about that,

'and I think we should start looking at our relationship in a different way.'

She shook her head, "No that's stupid Jennie! She's going to look at you like a kid!"

She checked her watch, "Dammit I'm going to be late all because of that little troll Snyder!" She picked up her pace heading toward the mansion, she was still in her school uniform, but she had no time to go home and change. Smiling to herself she figured Lisa wouldn't mind.

"You make a habit of talking to yourself?" a snide voice said from behind her.

Jennie stopped walking and braced herself, turning around to face the owner of the voice. "What do you want Parker, I'm in a rush."

Leering at her, he stepped up closer, his hand automatically touching her arm and caressing it slowly. "You know what I want Jennie."

She slapped his hand away and took a step back, "Parker I don't have time to deal with you! I've told you before and I'm telling you again, LEAVE ME ALONE! I don't want anything to do with you! EVER!"

She spun around but was stopped by his brutal grip on her shoulder. He spun her back around as his face twisted in an evil

smile. He leered down at her as his other hand came up and gripped her other shoulder, making her flinch.

"Gee Jennie, I always thought you were smart. But apparently, you're not! See I was planning on wooing you until you crawled to me on your hands and knees and begged me to fuck you. But now..." he gripped her arms and hauled her up against him, "Now I'm not going to play nice anymore! You're time is up beauty!"

His grip tightened and he pulled her along as he headed down an alley.

Jennie struggled desperately trying to get away, she wasn't that far from the mansion and she was pretty sure that she could outrun him if she could only get away.

"PARKER YOU BASTARD! LET ME GO!" She was frightened more than she ever had been but there was no way in hell she was going to let him know that.

Dragging her down the end of the alley he threw her up against the wall, trapping her with his body, "Shut up Jennie! You know you want it! I know you're no virgin...you're nothing but a whore that likes to spread her legs for older men!"

"FUCK YOU!" She spat at him and was rewarded with hard slap across the face.

Taking both her hands in one hand he held them above her head as his other hand grabbed her blouse and ripped it down the center revealing her black bra. Parker's mouth literally drooled and Jennie watched with revulsion as his tongue came out and licked away the spit that had settled in the corner of his mouth.

He pushed his head into her chest breathing in her scent of vanilla, "That's what you like isn't? That's what turns you on? Being with older men, it reminds you of your daddy don't it, you kinky bitch! Well, I can be your daddy; I'll be anything you want if that's what makes you wet."

His one hand slapped her thigh and then roughly skimmed up and

to her panties; he tore them off and then pinched her clit viciously!

"YOU FUCKING PIG!"

Fear consumed her and tears formed in her eyes as she screamed with all her might for someone to help her. "HELP! PLEASE SOMEONE HELP ME!"

His hand shot up and slapped her again; her head twisted to the side her cheek hitting the brick wall. "SHUT UP BITCH!"

He reached down and unzipped his jeans and pulled out his semi-hard cock.

There was a sudden crash in the shadow of the alley and a cat ran out.

As Parker's head turned towards the sound, Jennie took the opportunity. With everything in her soul, she kneed him in the balls.

Immediately he released her as his hands covered his crotch and he bent over in pain, falling to the ground, "FUCKING BITCH!"

Jennie smirked at him, her face wet with tears, her eyes red and swollen, she kicked him gleefully in the stomach.

"YOU ASSHOLE!"

She turned around and fled holding her blouse together as she ran to the only place, she could think off...the mansion.

***

Standing on the porch she tried to compose herself. She had cried the whole way here but when she finally got here, she had the good sense to know that she had to get it together. There was no way she could walk into this house looking the way she did. She couldn't let Kathy see her like this, how could she explain that a sick bastard almost raped her?

And Lisa, there was no way she could ever find out about this. If

yesterday was any indication of how deep her jealously ran, there was no knowing what the hell she would do if she found out.

She took out her brush and brushed her hair. Next came the mirror. Her breath sucked in and her eyes bulged in shock when she saw the red handprint on her cheek. Frantically she took out her make up bag and applied cover up over the mark. Next, she looked down at her blouse it was ripped to shreds. She quickly took it off and stuffed it in her bag. She buttoned up her jacket then smoothed her skirt. She still had no panties on, but she couldn't do anything about that.

Putting everything away she closed her eyes and took a deep breath, '

okay Jennie, calm and collected, nothing out of the ordinary happened, it's just another day.'

She put her hand on the knob and turned it.

She breathed a sigh of relief as she realized the hallway was empty. She quietly closed the door and walked over to the table to put her bag down. Taking another look in the mirror, she rubbed the cover up a little more to blend it in, but she pressed too hard and felt a sudden sharp pain. "Ouch!"

"Jennie?"

'Oh shit!'

Lisa came out of the library and approached her. She had been waiting for her to come so she could go back to work and as the clock ticked past three o'clock she had become increasingly agitated, every bone in her body telling, no screaming at her, that Jennie was in danger and something was wrong.

Lisa walked up behind her and looked at her reflection in the mirror. "What's wrong?"

Jennie averted her eyes unable to look at Lisa. She felt dirty and tainted and she couldn't stand to look into the depths of her concerned gaze.

She tried to laugh but it came out cracked, "Wrong? Nothing's wr...ong, don't be silly." She turned away from and went to walk up the stairs, desperate to get away from Lisa, desperate to clean her body of the scum that had touched her.

Lisa frowned and reached out, gently catching her by the upper arm.

Jennie flinched as pain radiated up her arm. She quickly scooted away from Lisa, as her scowl darkened.

"Jennie what happened?" Lisa voice was cold and hard, and demanded an answer.

"Nothing happened Lisa; I'm just a little tired." She yawned continuing with her charade. But it didn't matter. Lisa's eyes seemed to see every detail as her gaze scanned down her frame. Lisa noticed her jacket was buttoned up to her neck and there was no blouse underneath it as she could see tan skin just below the last button that sat atop her navel.

Lisa took a step closer her eyes hard as steel.

But she took another step back and started to climb the stairs. "Umm...I know you have to go back to work, but ummm...do you think you could give me an hour?"

Jennie smiled but it did not reach her eyes, no her eyes held a hint of fear in them and Lisa took another step, dread coursing through her body. "Jennie..." she spoke softly trying to keep the hostility out of her voice, "baby, come on talk to me, I know something's wrong, just tell me what it is?"

Jennie laughed a crackled sound that echoed off the walls, "Really Lisa, you're such a wo...worry wart, nothing's wrong. I'm just tired and I'd like to lay down for a little bit before you leave. Okay?" She didn't wait for her answer as she turned around and bolted up the stairs.

Lisa took two more steps her hand on the railing her body leaning forward to follow Jennie.

"Don't worry I'll be okay, I just need to sleep for a little bit." She called out then slammed her door shut.

Lisa cursed under her breath and did not hesitate or think twice. She ran up the stairs at full speed and crashed right into Kathy. She fell on the floor, "Ouch daddy."

"Oh God baby I'm sorry." Lisa leaned down and picked her up.

"Was that Jennie?"

"Yes it was but she's very tired sweetie, and I need you to go to your room and play for a little bit by yourself, okay? Can you do that for Daddy?" Lisa herded her toward her room and opened her door.

Kathy stepped inside, rubbing her sore derriere and she looked up at him, confusion on her face, "I guess so Daddy."

Lisa smiled at her, "Good girl. I'll come and get you a in a little while okay, just stay in here till I come and get you."

"Okay."

Lisa shut the door and ran down the hall, turning the corner to their wing. She reached her door and put her hand on the knob, she turned it...it was locked.

She growled angrily and leaned her ear against the door. '

Is that the shower?'

She growled again then stepped away pacing in front of her door furiously.

'Something happened I know it. She's not right I can feel it...something's wrong! Why won't she tell me! Jennie never wears her jacket buttoned! And where was her shirt?'

Fifteen minutes of Lisa pacing in the hallway she finally heard the water turn off and the bathroom door open. She approached her door again. She was about to knock on it when she heard her

talking.

"Rosé , I need you to come over to the mansion and help me with Kathy today."

"What? No, I'm okay, I just really need you here to help me."

"No...I'll explain when you get here, please just hurry."

She heard the click of the phone as she hung it back up. She stood back away from the door, her eyes burning holes into it. She lifted her hand and knocked. "Jennie...open the door."

Jennie jumped and turned frightened eyes to the door. She walked over to it and leaned against it, her palms coming up and resting on the wood. She was starting to lose it and she couldn't lose it, not in front of Lisa. "Please Lisa just leaves me alone for a little bit."

Lisa jerked on the knob, not accepting her answer. Her voice rose and it was hard as steel. "Jennie! OPEN THIS DOOR NOW!"

Jennie backed away clutching her robe, tears formed in her eyes and slid down her cheeks, she couldn't let Lisa see her like this, she just couldn't!

With all her strength Lisa threw her body against the door shoulder first, and the lock broke free, the door swung open and she stormed into the room, her eyes immediately landing on Jennie shaking form.

She rushed over to her and noticed right away the red marks on her clean washed cheek, undoubtedly a result of someone's hand.

Snarling Lisa took her tear-streaked face cradling it gently turning her head from side to side looking at the extent of the mark on her right cheek and the red scrape on her left. Lisa voice was laden with concern and rage, it was low and deadly, and it scared her. "Baby what happened? Are you alright?"

Lisa stepped back her eyes quickly roaming down her body looking for anything else but she was holding onto her robe with a death grip, and she couldn't see anything. She snarled and looked back up

into her eyes. "Jennie, talk to me!"

Jennie didn't speak she just shook her head still clutching her robe.

Lisa had had enough; she wasn't thinking that she might scare her; her only thought was to find out what happened. Her hand tore hers away and in one stroke she tore the robe away from her.

Jennie shrieked and jumped back. Her hands flailing about trying to cover her nudity trying to cover the angry red handprint that was on her leg and arms, but she couldn't and Lisa snarled like a mad dog as she dropped to her knees in front of her and gently touched the mark on her right thigh.

"Who did this?' Lisa asked as she continued to inspect it, her eyes and hands moving over to her other leg inspecting it for bruises.

Jennie was crying hysterically, and she didn't answer she couldn't form any words. Lisa actions reminded her of Parker, his breath on her skin, his rough hands on her body, his cruel harsh words in her ear. And she freaked out.

"No please...stop...please stop!" She screamed wildly as she tried to back away from Lisa, trying to push her off.

Lisa stood up her anger displaced with nervous anxiety for her lover. She wrapped her arms around her naked body, bringing her flush against her, tucking her head under her chin, Lisa tried to soothe her, tried to make her see who was holding her. "Shhh baby it's me, it's Lisa, shhhh...it's okay, no one's going to hurt you."

Jennie smelled her scent, the clean musky smell that was pure Lisa, her Lisa; she ceased her struggles her eyes lifted to Lisa.

"Lisa...my Lisa?" She whispered hopefully.

Lisa smiled, "Yes that's right baby your Lisa." Her hands smoothed down her hair and down her back, trying to comfort her.

Lisa picked her up and cradled her as she walked to the bed. Lisa laid her down gently and pulled the covers up and over her. Her heart was beating frantically as she sat down beside her, her hands

stroking her face carefully so not to cause her anymore pain. "I'll be right back."

Lisa got up and walked into the bathroom retrieving a cold washcloth she headed back to the bed, the whole time Jennie's eyes followed Lisa, unwilling to let her out of her sight even for a minute.

The bed dipped as she sat back down and placed the cold compress on her right check, Lisa's eyes hard and cold inspected her face. She started to mumble under her breath, words that Jennie could not make out; she wasn't even sure they were English.

Jennie hadn't wanted to react this way; she didn't want Lisa to know that it was her slutty reputation that put her in her current predicament. What would Lisa say, what would she think of her? But the concern and love in her eyes and in her body language, the way she had spoken to her, had broken down the wall she had temporarily put up and she freaked out as the full extent of the day's events came back at her like a runaway freight train and she was unable to keep from breaking down.

But now nestled in her warm bed, her lover tenderly stroking her and keeping her safe, she calmed. Her breath returned to its normal pattern, her mind cleared away the hysterics and she could think clearly again.

Yes, she hurt here and there, yes it was a traumatic experience, the worst she ever experienced. It was even more frightening than the death of her parents and brothers, but she was okay. Nothing had really happened he didn't get anything from her. And although she felt Lisa's worry and concern, she mostly felt her deadly aggression and that scared her even more.

Jennie lifted her hand to Lisa's face, caressing her cheek and tried to reassure her, "Lisa. I'm okay; really it's all right. I just freaked out that's all."

Lisa shook her head, "No Jennie, this is not okay, you are not okay. Something happened, someone...touched," she snarled, "you...someone hurt you and I want to know who."

Lisa's eyes stared into hers and she shuddered with apprehension, this was what she did not want. She cleared her throat and spoke strong and sure, "Lisa, I'm fine. Nothing happened...that I couldn't stop."

She shook her head no as her hands roamed down her body looking for more marks. "Did..." her voice hitched as she tried to get the words out, what she had to know, "did...he..."

"NO." Jennie forced her eyes to hers, her eyes now clear and determined, trying to get Lisa to calm down and listen to her, "No Lisa nothing happened I swear it never got that far."

Lisa was about to speak, about to ask her who it was that did this when the doorbell rang.

"That's Rosé." Jennie said.

Lisa wasn't listening, her eyes still darting all around her, still searching.

"Lisa!" Jennie snapped and her eyes swung to hers.

"That's Rosé I called her to come over, okay? Go let her in." Her voice was calm and steady, and it broke through her haze.

Lisa stood up, turned and walked toward the door in a trance like state. She stopped in the doorway and fixed her with a stern look, "Don't move."

Jennie smiled and nodded her affirmation and Lisa turned, closed the door and headed downstairs.

Jennie turned and picked up the phone, she dialed the number she knew from heart. Panic filled her heart and soul as to what Lisa would do, she had to stop this. She couldn't let Lisa do something stupid, something that she would regret later.

"Hello."

"Mino?" She croaked.

***

Twenty minutes later Lisa was pacing once again outside Jennie's door. She had let Rosé in then ushered her upstairs. When Jennie told Lisa that she could leave and go back to work, she had just stood there with her arms crossed across her chest unyielding in her decision to stay right where she was and find out who did this to her baby.

Jennie had surprised Lisa though, when she jumped up out of bed, totally oblivious to her nakedness, and pushed her out of the room. She had stood in the doorway blocking her re-entry like some Celtic warrior woman. "Lisa, stop it okay. I'm perfectly fine I just need to rest a little, that's why I called Rosé, so she can watch Kathy while I rest."

Then Jennie stepped closer and pressed her body against Lisa her hand cupped her cheek, "Lisa I'm grateful for your concern really I am, but it's okay. I'm okay."

Then her eyes turned commanding, "I do not want you running around town looking for someone and causing trouble. You have to remember Kathy; she needs her daddy here with her, not rotting away in some jail because of an asshole. Do you understand me?"

'She's out of her mind if she thinks I'm just going to let this go."

"Yes." Lisa said gratingly.

Jennie smiled and kissed her on the lips, "Good. Now you go back to work; everything is fine." She smiled one more time then closed the door.

Lisa heard the scrape of a chair as she put it up against the door. She harrumphed '

like that would stop me if I wanted to come in.'

Instead of leaving Lisa pressed her ear up against the door listening intently for any information.

"GO AWAY Lisa!" Jennie screamed out.

'Dammit how does she do that?'

Lisa moved away from the door and sat down in the chair in the hallway.

About a half hour later Rosé opened the door and came out. She closed it quietly and jumped when Lisa suddenly appeared right in front of her. "Is she okay? Who did this Rosé? Did she tell you?"

Rosé was fuming, she was so mad at Parker and she was mad that Jennie wasn't going to do anything about it. Jennie had explained that she didn't want to upset anyone and she definitely did not want Lisa to know because she feared what she would do. Rosé on the other hand thought that Parker had something coming to him and she didn't think twice about telling Lisa.

"She's okay, she's sleeping. It was that little asshole Parker." She whispered.

"Parker." Lisa growled the boy's face flashed before her, the day at the carnival, that little punk that had flirted with her. Lisa turned and headed toward the stairs, her mission set in her mind.

"Ah Lisa where's Kathy's room?" Rosé asked looking around completely lost in her surroundings as she quickly tried to keep pace with Lisa's long angry strides.

Lisa didn't say anything, just pointed to the door when she passed it, and continued down the stairs and to the library where she slammed the door shut.

"Okay...ah thanks." Rosé second-guessed her decision then shrugged it off, Parker was a low-life and he deserved whatever Lisa threw at him.

***

If Rosé had really known Lisa, she would have realized that she erred in telling her. Because ten minutes later Mino opened the door to the mansion and walked inside. Following his instincts he headed toward the front library, Lisa's favourite brooding room, and opened the door.

The room was dark; the curtains were drawn around the windows keeping the sunlight out. There was a desk lamp on illuminating the room in an eerie glow.

Lisa sat at her desk, swords and knives scattered all around. She held a thirteen-inch bowie knife in one hand while the other hand sharpened it.

'Ah shit.'

He walked in and closed the door taking his jacket off he threw it on the couch, sat down and lit a cigarette. Eyeballing Lisa he took a drag, "Lalisa, what are you doing?" he asked quietly.

And Lisa responded in kind, quiet and lethal, "Going hunting."

Since Lisa came down here, she thought of nothing but killing Parker. She thought of nothing but sticking her knife in his gut and twisting it, she thought of nothing but cutting off his little dick and hanging it on her wall like a prize.

'Shit she's lost it.'

"That's not a good idea Lalisa."

"Why not?" The question was calm, too calm to Mino's ears.

"Because then I'd have to explain to Kathy why her daddy was in jail, and I'd have to bail you out. Do you know the cost of bail these days? You know I don't keep that kind of cash lying about."

Lisa didn't say anything, Mino sighed and stood up walking over to the desk he laid his palms on it and leaned forward. "Lisa, I want to kill the little bastard as much as you do, but this is not the way."

Lisa's eyes snapped up to his, "That little fuck hurt her! He tried to rape her!" she turned away once again sharpening her knife, "now he has to pay. He has to learn he can't touch what's mine."

Mino's eyebrow rose at Lisa's use of the word 'mine', so things had progressed that far already. He wasn't surprised really Jennie was such an easy person to love and when she set her mind to it there

was nothing she couldn't have, and ultimately nothing Lisa could have done about it.

"Lisa, I know how you feel. She's like my sister, more than Carla ever was, but it still doesn't make it right."

Lisa suddenly stood up. Taking her knife strap off the table she tied it on her leg. When it was secured, she jammed the long deadly bowie inside and put on her jacket. Lisa leaned over and took the cigarette that was hanging out of Mino's mouth. She closed her eyes and took a long drag.

"I'm going to find that little punk and I'm going to teach him a lesson. You're welcome to join me but don't try to stop me." Lisa turned and walked away briskly.

"Lalisa! You don't even know where he is!" Mino called out. "Fuck!"

Mino hurried to catch up with Lisa. No, he couldn't stop her from going because he'd probably get his ass kicked, but he could go with her and stop her from killing the kid, because he couldn't let her go to jail, the fate of the family depended on it.

***

They drove around for the next hour looking for Parker.

"Come on mate let's call it quits, we'll never find him. Besides Jennie said she kicked him good and hard in the balls, he's probably home crying like a baby."

Lisa grunted. Her head swung to the right, "Stop the car." Lisa demanded.

Mino swore softly, he was happy they hadn't found him and was hoping to turn the car around and go home, but it looked like Parker's time was up.

As Mino stopped the car Lisa jumped out and stormed over to some dark-haired kid that was hanging out in front of the 'The Club B' talking to some girl.

"Shit! Lalisa wait up!" Mino slammed the car into park and not bothering to turn it off, jumped out and rushed after her.

"PARKER!" Lisa snarled just as she reached him.

Parker turned around to the sound of his name, a smile on his face that quickly disappeared as soon as he saw the angry hunter that was coming right at him. He recognized her immediately; she was the girl from the carnival that was with Jennie. He swallowed, fear filling him, but he couldn't run. His body was still, his legs wouldn't work; there was no escaping his inevitable doom.

Lisa grabbed him by the throat and picked him clear up off the ground. Parker's hands immediately went on top of her, clawing at them, trying to get her to release him.

"So, you like to rape girls!" Lisa sneered at him.

The girl Parker had been talking too sucked in her breath, her hand covered her mouth and she stared at Lisa with big frightened eyes.

Lisa turned to her, "If you don't wish to get raped by this puny excuse for a man you should leave."

She didn't say anything she just turned and ran.

"Lalisa." Mino said.

But Lisa ignored him, her full attention on the punk that she held in her grasp. She shook him roughly, Parker's feet dangled haplessly in the air and his face was slowly starting to turn blue.

"You think you can do what you did and get away with it? What kind of man are you that you have to force yourself on women in order to get a piece." Lisa spat on him then threw him into the wall. She stomped over to him and picked him up by his hair.

Her other hand shot out and grabbed Parker's dick squeezing it hard. Tears formed in Parker's eyes and he let out a scream of pain.

"What's a matter boy? Is it too small to pick up a girl the regular way?" Lisa snarled at him then threw him across the alley where he

slammed into the other wall.

He landed with a thud clutching his crotch, coughing and spitting up blood. When he saw Lisa coming for him again, the tears feel and he pleaded. "Please stop...I...didn't mean any harm, I swear!"

Lisa coldly laughed as she stormed over to him.

Mino leaned against the wall and lit up a butt, enjoying Parker's screams of pain. "Lalisa, before you kill the wanker, I'd like to take a whack at him myself if you don't mind." Of course, he wouldn't let her but it didn't hurt to put the fear of death in the kid.

Lisa picked Parker up, "Sure no problem bro," then punched him hard in the face. Blood spurted out of Parker's nose and he clutched it painfully, trying to stop the flow.

"Please...stop!"

But Lisa didn't listen to him, grabbing him by the lapels of his shirt she held him there while she punched him again and again.

"Is that what Jennie said right before you tried to rape her?" she said, following it through with a left cross in Parker's stomach with such force that she lifted him off the ground. Lisa released him and Parker stumbled back, hitting the wall and then sliding to the ground, his hands up in the air trying to ward Lisa off.

"I'm sorry...I'm sorry...please!"

But Lisa didn't heed his pleas, she kept up punching with a left, then a right, in the face, in the stomach, anywhere she could inflict pain she did with a smile on her face.

Parker fell to the ground barely conscious. He crawled on his hands and knees trying to get away, but Lisa kicked him in the back then rolled him over to face her.

Lisa unsheathed her knife and leaning down picked Parker up by the hair again, her blade poised at his neck.

Mino immediately stood at attention and walked over, "Lisa." He

whispered in her ear, "she wouldn't want this, don't do it, the kid's not worth it. Think of Kathy."

Lisa wasn't planning on killing him, even though he deserved it, she just wanted to scare the hell out of him and make sure that he never ever bothered her baby again.

Lisa leaned down and snarled into Parker's face, pressing her blade against his throat so he drew blood. She smiled evilly and snarled, "If you ever touch her or look at her, if you ever talk to her again or are ever in the same vicinity as she is, I will kill you. Do you understand me boy?"

Lisa pressed the blade further against Parker's neck and Parker shrieked in outright fear. "Yes...yes I understand I'm sorry...I'm so sorry."

Mino breathed a sigh of relief as Lisa stepped back from Parker, dropping him on the ground. Lisa cleaned the blood off of her knife on Parker's shirt, and then sheathed it.

"Look the kid's pissed his pants!" Mino laughed pointing at the wet-spot on Parker's pants.

Lisa grunted pleased with her punishment and Parker's show of remorse and fear.

"Come on let's go." Lisa turned around and walked toward the car.

Mino, though, could not resist getting his own licks in.

"Stay away from my family punk or next time you'll be dead either by me or her." He struck out with his foot, kicking Parker brutally in the face and knocking him out cold.

He kicked him again just for good luck then walked back to the car whistling.

Ch 12

Jennie only slept for half an hour, and she did so fretfully as images of Lisa behind bars filled her mind. She held Kathy in her arms, and she reached out to Lisa, her hand trying to squeeze in between the bars trying to touch her. But she couldn't and as she screamed for Lisa in her dream, her eyes snapped open, and she stared at the ceiling.

She heard soft sniffles coming from the corner of the room and she sat up and looked over.

Kathy sat in the corner her knees drawn up below her chin, her little hand covering her knees as she rested her chin on them. Her eyes were red and swollen and her cheeks glistened with tears.

"Kathy what's wrong?" she asked with trepidation as her heart filled with dread, '

had something happened to Lisa?'

Kathy stared back at her with big round eyes, and she spoke so softly that Jennie could barely hear her, "Are you dying?" she asked.

"What? No sweetie I'm not dying." She scooted over and patted the bed, "Come here."

Kathy immediately jumped up and ran over to the bed crying. She jumped up and threw herself in Jennie's outstretched arms crying her little heart out.

"Shhh baby it's okay." Jennie felt her eyes moisten as she held the crying limp close to her rubbing her back lovingly.

"Why did you ask that sweetie?"

Kathy hiccupped, "Because...because Daddy said you were tired,

and then she was very angry and then she left, and I haven't seen daddy or you." She hiccupped again, "and I thought I was alone." She cried.

Jennie closed her eyes to the pain she heard in her voice, her own heart weighed down with sadness from Kathy's fear. She hugged her and kissed the top of her head, then took her chin gently in her fingers bringing her face up and off of her chest.

"No baby I'm not dying, I was just a little tired that's all. And your daddy was upset by something to do with work, not you or me being sick, and she probably just ran out to deal with that."

'Yeah right I

am so going to kill her when she gets home!'

"You are never alone baby. Never. I'm always here for you and so is your daddy. We both love you very, very, very much."

Kathy smiled as her eyes dried, and her crying ceased. "I love you too Jennie." Kathy hugged Jennie with all her strength her little face crinkling with her effort to show the older girl just how much she did love her.

"Sweetie where's Rosé?"

Kathy yawned, "She's making tea." She yawned again.

Jennie seeing that Kathy was drained and tired, rose from the bed and placed her under the covers. "Well, I want you to take a nap for me okay, just for a little bit, then by the time you get up your daddy will be home..."

'She better be'

"And then we'll have dinner together, okay?"

Kathy smiled at her and then yawned again, it had been a long day for her and she was very tired. "Okay Jennie."

"Good girl." She leaned down and kissed her on the cheek, "I love

you."

"I love you too." Kathy's eyes fell on their own as sleep overtook her tired little body.

Jennie's fingers trailed over her cheek and down her hair, her eyes glazing over with love and deep emotion for the small little girl.

She walked quietly out of the room and closed the door. Her face immediately hardened. She was mad at herself. She never should have come here afterwards. It was a mistake that she knew. Until now, though, she hadn't realized the full ramifications coming here instead of going home.

Because of her Lisa was out there doing God knew what to Parker and poor little Kathy was freaking out about being alone. She was so mad she didn't know who she was madder at, Parker for instigating this whole sick scenario or herself for making it worse. She should have just gone home and licked her own wounds.

As Jennie made her way downstairs, she thought fleetingly how Lisa found out who did it, but seeing the redhead in the kitchen she knew right away. Rosé had been mad, madder than Jennie had ever seen her, and she probably told Lisa thinking that she was doing the right thing. But she wasn't mad at Rosé, it wasn't her fault; no, she had no one to blame but herself.

"Hey Rosé." She dropped down despondently in the seat at the table and Rosé turned from the counter and walked over to her and poured some tea.

"How are you feeling Jennie?"

"You mean besides the fact that I feel like shit for getting Lisa's family involved in this bullshit that was no one's fault but my own?" She shrugged, "okay."

Rosé smiled kindly at her and sat down. "Jennie, I know you're worried, but Parker deserves whatever he gets." She lowered her voice and leaned in, "It was not your fault he tried to rape you!"

She snorted, "No but it was my reputation that led Parker on."

Rosé shook her head, "That doesn't matter Jennie, there is no excuse for what he did, none!"

Jennie sighed, "I know but still I never should have come here, I should've just gone home. Now Lisa is probably going to go to jail, Kathy will be left alone, and it will be all my fault!"

Rosé studied her friend, "Why did you come here Jennie?"

When Jennie looked up at her confused she continued, "I mean I can tell that you and Kathy are very close, and I know that there are...feelings between you and Lisa, but I mean you barely know them, why did you come here and not go home or to Mino's for that matter."

Jennie dropped her head on the table banging it hard making Rosé jump.

"Oh God I'm right, you think I'm right...I've ruined this family!" she said dramatically and Rosé smiled at her antics.

"Jennie don't be dramatic. That's not what I meant. I guess what I meant to ask you is what exactly is between you and Lisa? Have you umm...slept together?" she whispered. 'They have to be, she had seemed way too comfortable being naked in Lisa arms.'

Jennie smiled against the table and her shoulders shook.

Rosé immediately jumped up and over to her putting her arm around her friend. "Oh God Jennie I'm so sorry I didn't mean to upset you."

Lifting her head from the table Rosé finally heard the reason for the shaking shoulders; she wasn't crying she was...laughing?

"I'm sorry Rosé I don't know why I found that funny. But the answer to your question is no, we are not...sleeping together. Do we want to? Yes. But Lisa is a morally correct girl and won't till I turn eighteen."

"A morally correct girl...I didn't know they existed." Rosé honestly answered, making Jennie smile, "Yeah go figure, just my luck that

I'd find her."

Hearing the front door open Jennie jumped up and ran to the hallway ready to give Lisa a piece of her mind. She was worried sick about her and what she had gotten herself into and she was going to give her hell.

She stormed out just as Lisa and Mino were hanging up their jackets. "You know that was rather fun. It's been a long time since you and me brawled around together...I've missed that." Mino said as Lisa grinned at him thinking the same thing.

"I'm glad you two were having such a great time destroying our lives!" Jennie said, not realizing what she said, as she stood there her arms crossed over her chest, fire coming out of her eyes.

Lisa glared back at her, annoyed that one, she was up and not resting, and two that she was actually yelling at her about caring about her.

Mino swallowed nervously; he hated that look of hers it scared the hell out of him, so he approached her trying to calm her.

"Look luv..."

Jennie stomped over to him pointing her finger in his chest pushing him back against the wall. "Don't you look luv me Mino! I didn't call you so you could help Lisa destroy her life and leave her daughter all alone! I called you to stop her!"

Mino snorted, "Stop her! Pet please do you see the size of her, she could easily swat me away like a fly and she has in the past. There was no way I was getting in her way."

He stood away from the wall straightening his shirt, "Besides I don't know why you're getting your panties in a bunch the wanker's still alive and he deserved everything he got!"

Lisa grunted her agreement.

"That's not the point!" She yelled.

Lisa turned to her, "What the hell are you doing out of bed?"

Jennie swung her attention to Lisa as Mino breathed a sigh of relieve. "I'm not sick Lisa."

"No, but you went through a very traumatic ordeal, and you need to rest." She grabbed her arm and started to pull her up the stairs. Jennie dug her heels in the floor, which didn't help because she had socks on and the floor was marble tiles, so she just slid along until she got to the stairs where she grabbed the banister and pulled her arm free.

"Jennie." Lisa snarled at her.

"Lisa. I am not a baby. I do not need you tell me that I should rest when I don't need too! I am perfectly fine and you are blowing this whole thing out of proportion!" she threw her hands up in the air.

Seeing the thunderous rage on Lisa's face, Mino cleared this throat. It was definitely time to get out of here. He walked over to Rosé who was standing there, wide-eyed as she stared at Lisa. "Come on Red I'll give you a lift home."

He pulled her out the door.

"What about Jennie? How will she get home?" She asked as she let Mino drag her out.

"She is home."

The door closed and Lisa let loose, her face turned red as she walked over to her, standing up tall she looked down at her, shooting flames right back at her. "OUT OF PROPORTION!"

"YES!"

"OUT OF PROPORTION!" Lisa was flabbergasted that she thought she was taking this too far, when all she had been thinking about was her safety.

Her eyes turned to slits, "Did I stutter?" She sneered at Lisa angry that she didn't see what the problem was.

Throwing her hands up in the air Lisa spun around and started to pace muttering to herself, again in some other language that Jennie could not understand. Lisa was making her dizzy and she couldn't take it.

"Stop...please if you have something to say, say it in ENGLISH!" Jennie yelled at her.

Lisa stopped pacing and grabbing her by the arm dragged her into the library slamming the door shut. "I am not blowing this out of proportion Jennie, that sick fuck tried to rape you! You would let him get away with that!"

"Lisa, I know what he did I was there remember and yes, I would because he does not matter! What happened does not matter! All that matters is you and Kathy, and I don't want anything to happen to you two because of me, especially when it was my fault!"

Jennie was so angry with the entire situation but the fact that Lisa didn't even think about the consequences of her actions was the most unsettling. Where was the cool and calm self-control that she prided herself on? She felt completely responsible, and she was scared for both Lisa and Kathy

Jennie threw her hands up in the air and went to leave, "Forget it, this was a mistake, me coming here was a mistake!"

Lisa grabbed her before she touched the doorknob, and she grimaced as pain radiated up her arm. Lisa growled at her, "See you're not fine! And what do you mean it's your fault!"

Jennie blushed and tried to turn away embarrassment filling her, but Lisa wouldn't let her. She grabbed her chin making her look and when Lisa saw her flushed face, her anger calmed and her eyes softened, "It's not your fault that someone tried to take advantage of you Jennie. He's responsible for that, not you."

"No...it is my fault. Because he thought I was easy, because I was always running around on my own, hanging out places I shouldn't have been" She lowered her eyes unable to look at Lisa when she spoke her next words, "because of the men I'd been with."

Shame filled her to the core, and she shoved Lisa's hand away and took a step back.

"Don't you see Lisa, Parker was only doing what he thought everyone else was getting! It's my fault! And because of me you're going to go to jail and Kathy will be left all alone!" The guilt she felt overwhelmed her and she started to cry.

Lisa quickly gathered her hugging her tightly. She couldn't believe that she was concerned about her and Kathy and not herself. The fact that she blamed herself for the whole situation really pissed Lisa off and it broke her heart.

Lisa primal urge to kill Parker was not based on her own possessiveness but rather a deep brooding concern for her mental well-being. Lisa knew that this was a traumatic experience; one that might leave permanent scars on a person with lesser self-strength than Jennie. And that was what upset her the most she was so young, she had her whole life ahead of her, so much to explore and enjoy in the sexual world, things that Lisa planned on exploring with her, and she didn't want her to be afraid of doing those things because of one sick little bastard.

Jennie was so special and so selfless that it reassured Lisa in her decision to hunt Parker down. Because he did have to pay for what he did or tried to do. And if she wasn't going to look out for herself then it was up to her, and she had no trouble filling that job.

"Baby that's not true I want you to listen to me; Parker is a sick person that has no business calling himself a man. No one, and I mean no one, should take advantage of someone just because they hear rumors. And as far as me going to jail, that's not going to happen, okay. Don't worry, I'm not going anywhere and Kathy will never be left alone. She'll always have us."

Jennie wrapped her arms around Lisa and snuggled into her warmth. "I'm sorry, I'm so sorry. You must hate me."

Lisa tilted her head up smiling at her, "I could never hate you baby."

Lisa head lowered and Jennie opened her mouth as Lisa's lips glided

over hers. Her heart that had been heavy with anxiety and fear now filled with warmth and love, as Lisa mouth made love to hers.

Lisa released her lips and stroked her hair as she laid her head back against her chest. God she felt so good snuggled up against her. Her breasts pressed against her chest and her body instantly warmed. Lisa's heart was so full of contentment and joy that she knew she could not live without Jennie. Somehow, Jennie had wiggled her way into her heart and home and she never wanted to let her go. God what would she have done if something really serious had happened? She could have lost her forever and that was totally unacceptable.

"God Jennie if anything would have happened to you...I don't know what I would have done. You mean so much to me and I couldn't stand the thought of someone hurting you. I just wanted to hurt him back, I'm sorry if I scared you. I guess you just bring out the beast in me." Lisa smirked.

Being in the shelter of her arms and hearing her words relaxed her, and Jennie lifted her head smirking back, her eyes teasing and playful. "Have I told you lately how sexy you are when you smirk?"

Lisa chuckled, "No," and kissed her lightly, "but you can show me...later, right now I'm starving." She winked.

Jennie laughed at Lisa, "Beating someone up makes you hungry huh?"

"Hungry for food..." Lisa pushed against her, and Jennie hummed at the feeling of her cock "and you." Leaning down, she kissed her neck.

Jennie chuckled, "Well that will have to wait, food first, then...food." She giggled as Lisa nibbled on her neck.

"Where's Kathy?" she asked in between love bites.

Jennie leaned her head back, giving Lisa better access, "She's taking a nap."

Then she abruptly stood back, "Oh God Kathy, Lisa she was so

upset. She thought that I was dying and that you were leaving her, and that she would be all alone."

Lisa looked at her somberly, "Like her dream."

She shook her head, "I told her that it wasn't true, that I wasn't dying and that we both loved her and that she was stuck with us forever."

Lisa smiled, "Did she believe you?"

"I think so, she said she did."

"I'll go up and check on her." Lisa leaned back and kissed her again.

"Lisa?"

"Yeah?"

"Thank you."

Lisa smiled at her, her eyes heavy with heat, "You can thank me later." Then she winked at her and left the room.

***

Smiling, Lisa stared at the serene cherub face of her baby, her sole purpose for living...at least until Jennie came into her life. Now she had two purposes for living.

It was funny how Lisa never really thought about any of these things before Jennie. She had always loved Kathy, had always wanted to make sure that she did the right thing for her, but she had never considered that she was missing something else, something that was vital for a normal healthy life...security and a deep, soul-binding love of family.

Of course, Lisa had always worked hard to make sure that her future was secure, but she had neglected the most important thing. A sense of security was all good and dandy, but she hadn't felt that. Her nightmares proved that. No, she had been forgetful in reminding her and telling her and showing her every single day that

she loved her more than anything in this world, that she would always be her daddy and that she would always be there for her.

Lisa sent a silent thank you to God for bringing her Jennie, she opened her eyes, opened her heart and soul to the possibilities of what love and a family can be, and Lisa knew with every fiber of her being that Jennie had to stay with them. She was determined to make her understand that they were now together, the three of them, and that she wasn't going to let anyone, or anything stand in the way of their family.

"Hi daddy." Kathy woke up raising her hands and wiping at her sleepy eyes.

Lisa smiled at her, her hand caressing her cheek, "Hi baby. Kathy daddy wants to talk to you for a little bit, okay?"

Kathy gave her a bright smile and her eyes lit with joy, "You want to talk to me daddy?"

Kathy sounded so surprised yet happy that Lisa felt the tug of guilt on her heart, God she had been such a fool.

"Yes." Lisa said.

"Okay, what about? "Suddenly her eyes widened, and her next words rushed out, "I'm sorry I broke the vase in the dining room daddy? I didn't mean too, please don't be mad."

'Vase in the dining room?'

her face blanched,

'My four-hundred-year-old Ming Vase?'

Seeing Kathy stare back at her with frightened eyes Lisa pushed down her annoyance at hearing that

, 'it was just a vase, it's not important. It's only worth a quarter of a million dollars and was handed down from generation to generation. No biggie'

she almost choked on the nausea she felt.

"No sweetie it's not about the vase."

Kathy blew out a sigh of relief.

Lisa looked at her, she wanted to make sure that she understood everything that she was going to say, and that she also heard and understood everything that she would say.

"Sweetie, you know that I love you don't you and that I would never ever let anything happen to you?"

Kathy shook her head happily, smiling, "Yes Daddy, I love you too and would never let anything happen to you either."

Lisa smiled at her, "Good. And you know that your mommy loved you too?"

She shook her head again, "Yes daddy."

Then she seemed sad, and her eyes lowered, "Daddy, can I tell you something?" she asked quietly.

"Of course, baby you can always talk to me about anything."

"I don't remember mommy. Does that make me a bad daughter?" She asked so quietly she barely heard her.

Lisa smiled at her and rubbed her cheek, "No baby it doesn't. Kathy you were so young when your mommy left us it's normal that you don't remember her."

Lisa leaned over and took the picture off the table and showed it to her. "That's why I gave you this and all the other pictures of your mommy, so you would always remember her, even if you really don't, you understand?"

Kathy took the picture and looked at it, Lisa could tell that her little mind was thinking something, and the look on her face told her that whatever it was, it was something that bothered her.

"What's a matter baby? You can tell me."

"Daddy, I know that I love you and Uncle Mino and Grandpa Dave, but when I look at mommy, I don't feel that way."

"What do you feel?" he asked.

"I feel sad that I don't feel love," she said.

Kathy was so amazing, her baby; she was so attuned to her own feelings and what was around her. Lisa had no idea where she got it from, and she didn't care. She was just glad that she did.

"I can understand that but I don't think you need to be sad. You never had the chance to get to know her."

Her face reddened slightly as she spoke her next words, "I don't feel sad because I don't love her like that daddy," she snuck a peek at Lisa, "I feel sad because when I look at Jennie, I feel that way but not for my real mommy and that makes me feel bad."

Lisa smiled at her understanding what she was saying. She felt like she was betraying her mommy because she felt that love for Jennie and not her. Well, she knew what that felt like, though she didn't feel like she was betraying Carla. She knew what it felt like to love Jennie...

'Wait...love Jennie? I love Jennie? I do...I love Jennie!

' A blazing smile appeared on her face but then it quickly disappeared, 'But does she love me?' She frowned.

Kathy had been watching Lisa closely and at the abrupt change of her facial expressions confused her. "Is that wrong daddy?"

'Huh?'

"What? I'm sorry baby no it's not wrong. Your feelings are never wrong. If that's what you feel inside, then there is nothing wrong with that."

'Exactly! That's what you have to tell Jennie!'

She sighed, "That's good daddy, because I don't ever want Jennie to leave us." She looked up at her and Lisa couldn't hold back the prideful smile. She looked just like her when she was demanding something, mean and unyielding, her way or the highway.

Lisa thought for a second that in the future there were probably going to be many arguments with her daughter as they butted heads over something, but in this, there was no argument, no disagreement. In this they were joined together in their mission to keep Jennie with them...always.

"Me too baby."

***

After their talk Lisa felt so much better and so did Kathy. They both came to the understanding that they did love each other and needed each other, that family was what would keep them strong, and they were also determined to make the size of their family grow. And as they both sat down to eat, and looked on as Jennie handed them their plates of macaroni and cheese, they each contemplated what actions to take to ensure that they succeeded.

Lisa was thinking of moonlight walks and candlelight dinners with champagne and strawberries, velvet and silk's, all adorning her beautiful body, as she made slow and tender love to her, showing her with her hands, body and mouth how much she loved her and needed her.

Kathy was thinking that maybe if she helped wash the dishes and cleaned up after herself more that maybe Jennie would want to stay or maybe if she gave her one of her teddy bears, Jennie really seemed to like the soft white one. He was one of Kathy's favourites given to her by her Uncle Mino, but she would gladly give him to Jennie if she promised to stay with them.

After dinner, they sat down in the living room and watched Finding Nemo...again. Kathy sat in between them on the couch, and as Jennie and Kathy mimicked every single word of the movie to each other, Lisa sat there happily chuckling at them.

When the movie ended and Kathy was fast asleep, her head on Lisa's lap and her feet lying over Jennie's stomach, Lisa and Jennie shared a secret smile. Anticipation and longing stared back at them. Words weren't needed as Lisa stood up with Kathy in her arms. She smiled down at Jennie and silently left the room and went upstairs.

Jennie stretched, happiness filling every fiber of her being, she stood up and her feet carried her outside and into the warm night air. She breathed deep and the subtle smells of grass and roses filled her senses. She walked over to the pool and took her shoes off dipping her toes in she swung her foot back and forth enjoying the warm water.

She sighed feeling relaxed and sat down on one of the lounge chairs and put her feet up. It had been a rough day, very rough but in reality, it had been a very soul-searching day. She realized that there were consequences for everything that she did. Some adult she was, she had never in her life thought about consequences before, always just running around and doing what she wanted with no thought to anything or anyone else.

But before Jennie felt like she had nothing to lose so why think? But now, now she felt like she had everything to lose, and she didn't want to lose a damn thing, she wanted more, she loved Kathy with all her heart and if she were honest with herself, she would admit that she felt almost a maternal bond with her.

And Lisa. God, Jennie loved her with everything in her.

'Love her? I love her? I do...I love her! Holy shit!'

The smile that appeared disappeared,

'but Lisa doesn't love me, she just wants me, she's just obsessed with my body. I know she cares about me, I know that she would protect me from harm and keep me safe, but Lisa doesn't love me, does she?'

Suddenly strong arms came over the chair and rested on her shoulders, "Well, serious Jennie, we meet again," Lisa teased. She couldn't see her face when she walked outside, but she sensed her inner thoughts were not exactly easy.

Jennie smiled and looked up at her, her hands snaking up and pulling Lisa down, "Smell smoke, do you?" Jennie kissed her beautiful chuckling mouth.

Pulling back from each other, they said at the same time, "Talk?" then laughed.

Lisa took a seat on the other lounge chair, facing her, as Jennie sat up and put her feet on the ground facing Lisa.

"Jennie" "Lisa" they said at the same time again sharing another giggle.

"You go first." Lisa said.

Jennie smiled, took a deep breath and started, "Lisa when I first came here, I thought it would be just another job you know and I wasn't too happy about the whole thing, I was really just doing it to appease Mino. You know he can be very annoying when he wants something."

She laughed, "I know."

"But I..." okay here it was the hard part her gaze lowered, and she stared at the concrete. "I haven't been this happy in so long. Actually, I don't know if I've ever been as happy as I have been this past week. I...Lisa I love Kathy with all my heart and soul, and to be honest, I feel so close to her almost like..." She didn't know if she should say it, wasn't it wrong, wasn't she overstepping her boundaries?

But Lisa knew what she was going to say, and she smiled at her warmly, tilting her head down and trying to see her eyes, "like her mother?"

Her eyes snapped up an awkward smile on her face. "Is that bad? I don't want to take the place of Carla, I know I never could and I don't want to. I just can't help what I'm feeling."

Lisa hand lifted and sifted through her hair, it was odd she was so much like Kathy more than Carla ever was, "No it's not wrong. I actually had this conversation with Kathy before."

Her eyes widened, "you did?"

"Yup, seems she's feeling the same way about you."

Her eyes watered at that revelation and she smiled, "She does?"

"Yes."

Her smile went away and she looked worried, "and...and what did you tell her?"

Jennie didn't know how Lisa would feel about that, she in no way wanted her to feel like she was taking over or that she was losing her daughter to someone that she just met.

But Lisa smiled at her and continued to stroke her hair adoringly, "I told her what I'm going to tell you, that I understand how she feels and that it made sense, and mostly, that her feelings weren't wrong if that's what she felt then that's what she felt."

She relaxed and the worry disappeared, "So you're not mad?"

"Mad! Baby how could I be mad that an incredible, strong, intelligent and compassionate woman loves and adores my child and that my child loves and adores her." Lisa shook her head looking at her in wonderment, "I'd have to be stupid to be mad and not appreciate and be grateful to know that there was someone out there that loves her as deeply as I do."

Jennie smiled and leaned forward to kiss Lisa gently on the lips. The kiss lasted longer than she intended and when they pulled away, they were both breathless. Seconds ticked by as they each tried to calm the raging storm and clear their minds; there was still so much to be said.

Jennie sat back, a shy smile on her face and continued, "Well I'm glad you feel like that because it makes the next thing, I have to say much easier."

Jennie couldn't tell Lisa that she loved her, not yet. It was too soon, and honestly, she didn't want to have her heartbroken by Lisa saying that she didn't. But she could be honest with her in other

ways, so when she continued her voice was strong and firm, making Lisa smile inside, just like Kathy.

"Lisa, I care deeply for you, very, very deeply and I want you to know that I want more out of...our relationship, than just sex. Don't get me wrong, I want that..." her eyes darkened, her voice became husky with desire, "...more than anything in this world. But what I really want is to be with you, to be with you and Kathy...Lisa, I want us to be...."

"A couple?" Lisa asked interrupting her.

"Yes. I don't want to be without you. I don't like going home; I don't like being away from you two. I feel so happy and contented when we're all together like I belong to a family, and I don't want to lose that." She rushed on, now nervous to hear Lisa response, unsure of what she would say, "if you don't want that I understand..." she lowered her eyes, "we've only just met and I know I've been really, really pushy but..."

Suddenly Lisa was on her knees in front of her, her hands on her face, her mouth on her mouth as she kissed her eagerly. As Jennie opened for her and her tongue played with Lisa, she tasted, love and tenderness, passion and yearning. She tasted a deep connection that went beyond everything that she had ever known, and it was everything that she was feeling. Her hands came up and cradled Lisa's face; she licked her bottom lip, just as she pulled back.

They stared at each other tenderly, "Jennie I want the same thing. I don't want you to ever leave us and neither does Kathy. You are a part of our family, and you will always belong here. Every time I look at you my heart just feels like it's going to explode with so much emotion that it scares me. I've only ever felt this way about Kathy, but never for another woman. To feel such a deep connection with a lover is beyond anything I've ever experienced and it's a little frightening how strong those feelings are."

She shook her head, "I know. I feel that too."

They stared into each other's eyes, neither speaking what their heart and souls were screaming at them to say, those three little words

that would seal their fate. They were both a little insecure about that; it was a big step. They only just realized what it was themselves and to speak it aloud seemed...taboo. It was too new and they each wanted to savor their understanding of their emotions for a little longer. It seemed sweeter that way.

They smiled then Jennie jumped up. All this talk of emotions and connections, reminding her of other connections she wanted to make.

"Swim with me?" She asked her hand running down Lisa's cheek. Then without waiting Jennie lifted her shirt off and Lisa sat there with her mouth hanging open and her eyes riveted on her perky breasts that were now staring right in the face.

Next her shorts came off followed quickly by her panties tossing them behind her. She stood like a goddess with the moonlight kissing her skin and the pool water shimmering behind her. She was calling to her.

Lisa sat there her eyes hot and heavy with lust and desire as she stared at her neatly trimmed pubic hair. She took a step closer and pressed Lisa's face into her belly hugging her head. And Lisa could do nothing but close her eyes and breath in her scent, her cock, aroused the second her top came off, now was hard as a rock and throbbing painfully.

Jennie stepped back, smiled sexily, then in a blink of an eye, gracefully dove into the water.

When she came back up to the surface and smoothed her hair back Lisa continued to just stare at her blankly. She laughed at his look, "What's a matter? Shy?" she asked.

Lisa smirked at her and stood up, unbuttoning her shirt and pants.

Jennie watched with hungry eyes as inch after rock hard inch of her god like physique was revealed. She licked her lips "Mmmm...has anyone ever told you that you have a body like a goddess?" she asked playfully then almost laughed at her expression, "Lisa are you blushing?"

Lisa was. She tried not to, but she couldn't help it. Even though she had been told that before, coming from her made it sound much more...carnal.

When Lisa was finally naked and Jennie's eyes were riveted to her huge hard shaft standing tall and strong, she gulped. All her ability to tease gone, her blood pressure rose, and her heart felt like it was going to jump right out of her chest.

Lisa smiled knowingly at her and dove in the pool. Lisa swam underneath until she reached her, then she held her legs as she licked her leg all the way up until her head popped out of the water and she could hear her giggles of pleasure.

Jennie looked down, her hands immediately wrapping around Lisa's neck. Lisa licked her belly as her hands went around and squeezed her ass.

"Mmm...isn't this a little forbidden...me, you, naked in a pool with no one around?" she asked playfully, her fingers toying with lisa ear.

Lisa stopped her attention to her flat tight belly and looked up at her, "Isn't that what makes it hotter," She leaned over and kissed her navel then rubbed her check against her belly. "Doesn't it turn you on to know that we shouldn't but we could?" She took a small patch of skin in between her teeth laving it with her tongue.

Jennie chuckled, "Well we could. You're the one that seems to think we should wait."

"You must really hate me for that," Lisa said teasingly, her fingers drawing light circles around her butt.

Jennie laughed leaning down and kissing her lips, "Hate? no...frustrated, aggravated, annoyed, and completely and utterly horny as hell all the time...yes."

"I'm sorry baby maybe I can help you with that." Lisa's voice trailed off as her mouth clamped on to a breast. Lisa drew her nipple in sucking hard and tapping it lightly with her tongue. Jennie wove

her hands further into her hair holding Lisa closer as her leg came up and slid on to her waist, opening her up for Lisa wandering fingers that now trailed a line down the crack of her ass and to her aching core.

Lisa's fingers started an elegant dance of light touches and gentle pushes on her clit and all around her lips, probing and exploring her most secret places.

"God Lisa...that feels so good."

"I know baby." Lisa said as she watched the play of emotions on her face as she continued to touch her and ply her with bold caresses.

Feeling naughty, Lisa decided to tease her the way she had teased the other night. Moving them backwards through the water she stopped when her back hit the cool tiled wall of the pool. Positioning her so Jennie sat astride, she moved her cock so it lay level and placed her on top of it. When Lisa felt her moist core she placed her hands on her hips urging her to slide back and forth, to ride her.

Jennie let the buoyancy of the water guide her movements as she moved her hips back and forth exhilarating in the feeling Lisa hard cock created against her sore slick pussy.

"Ohhh" Her head was thrown back her breath coming out in short erratic gasps and Lisa watched captivated with her dazzling beauty and the way the light of the moon seemed to shine only for her, illuminating her in a glow of fire.

"You're so beautiful baby." Lisa voice was low and smooth, like a wave of heat that rolled over her body infusing her senses with lust and passion. Every hair on her body tingled and every move she made seemed to be tenfold as her pleasure increased.

"I can't wait to be inside of you...deep inside of you." Lisa closed her eyes as her pace increased, "God...inside...so bad."

"Yes...deep...so deep." She whined her hips moving faster and faster.

Lisa deep hypnotic voice continued as she opened her eyes and

continued to watch her. "All I want is to be inside of you, feel you clench around me, feel every single muscle in your body constrict as you cum."

"YES... cum... I want to cum all over your cock baby. I want you to cum inside, filling me...taking me...all of me...please, cum for you...only for you!"

Jennie gave as good as she got and Lisa was so turned on by her words that she gripped her hips roughly pushing her harder on her cock as she pressed up, Lisa head dove down to Jennie's neck and she sucked in a patch of skin, biting it and then soothing it with her tongue.

She moved quicker the water making her movements smoother and more graceful than they normally would be in her erratic frantic state.

"That's right baby cum for me...only for me!" Lisa growled reaching down she pushed down on her clit and Jennie exploded. Her eyes squeezed shut as the blackness took over and the stars came out shining brightly, blinding her with their intensity. "Lisa!"

Lisa was right behind her, the erotic beauty of her orgasm fueling her own as her deep bellow of release rang strong in the silence of the night.

Her movements slowed, her eyes opened and she looked at Lisa with a small o of surprise on her lips. "Oh my god Lisa that was incredible!" She kissed Lisa hard then smiled and purring like a contented cat as she stroked her back.

"Mmmm no arguments there." Lisa said as she smacked her on the ass.

"Ouch...Lisa!" Jennie chuckled then felt the heat rise in her body again. Her eyes smoldered as she looked at her, "You keep that up you might not make it out of this pool alive." She slithered closer rubbing her breasts against Lisa's chest, "I might just eat you up!" she bit her neck making Lisa growl and hit her ass again.

"Lalisa? Is that you?" A voice said from behind them.

'Holy shit!'

Pushing Jennie under the water Lisa stood up and turned around.

"R...Rupert?" Lisa squeaked out.

Ch 13

Lisa couldn't believe her luck. This was not the way she expected to end her day, by being caught literally red handed by her father-in-law, naked, in a pool with an underage girl, who just so happened to be her daughter's babysitter.

'I'm going to hell.'

"Rupert, what...what are you doing here?" Lisa fidgeted on her feet as she continued to hold Jennie's head under the water with one hand. '

I hope she can hold her breath for a long time.'

Jennie had no idea what was going on because she had been so swept up in the afterglow of her release that she had no idea who had walked in on them. Obviously, it was someone that Lisa wanted her to hide from if the death grip on her head was any indication. Since she didn't know who it was, she wasn't feeling that sympathetic toward Lisa's discomfort and instead was starting to get annoyed.

"I called Saturday, and there was no answer, and I hadn't heard from any of you in a week. I got worried, so I flew over." David said, his eyes squinting in the darkness at Lisa. He stepped closer to the pool and noticed the clothes on the side. Seeing a pair of white lacy underwear, his eyebrow rose, and he looked around looking for the owner of those barely there undergarments.

Lisa didn't know what to do, but she knew she had to get David out of there before Jennie drowned. Unfortunately for her, too much time had passed and Jennie started scratching her legs trying to get out. When Lisa didn't, Jennie bit her.

"Ouch!" Lisa released her immediately and jumped up on one leg, her hand going to the bite mark that was on her leg.

Jennie jumped up out of the water, gasping for air and glared at Lisa, "Lisa what the fu..."

Seeing David standing there she quickly covered her naked breasts, "David...hey, ah...what's up?" Her face was beat red with embarrassment.

David took another step closer and upon closer inspection, took a step back, "Jennie? Is that you?"

Lisa finally recovering from her assault on her leg turned to Jennie then David.

'Holy shit they know each other? Of course, they know each other, you putz David is Mino's father and Mino has known Jennie since she was ten! Oh god, I'm fucked!'

"Ah...yup it's me...good old Jennie." She said happily trying to cover up the extreme mortification of being caught with Lisa naked in a pool by the person who was like a father to her.

Rupert David stood on the patio looking at the two of them. First his face was one of confusion, until he put the scene together; it wasn't hard considering that they were naked, then his face changed to one of disbelieve and outrage. "Jennie what are you doing here? And why are you both naked in the pool?"

Both Lisa and Jennie looked at each other and then opened their mouths to speak, but David cut them off.

"Wait...don't answer that."

He looked closely at them, one by one. "Jennie you are to get out of that pool immediately young lady and get yourself home! Does Riley know you're here? Probably not. I don't know why I even thought to ask. Lalisa you will meet me in the library now; there is much to be explained!"

His words leaving no room for arguments, he turned and swiftly walked into the house.

Jennie breathed a sigh of relief that he left. She didn't want to talk

to David right now. He was so...proper; he always expected her to be a lady, and he always ruined her fun. She felt a little bad for Lisa; she could just imagine what was going through her head.

'I'm dead! I am so dead!'

Lisa jumped up out of the pool and turned to help Jennie out. Not once did Lisa look at her, but she was mumbling again in that language that she had no idea what she was saying. '

One of these days I'm going to have to ask her about that.'

Jennie quietly got dressed as Lisa did, and when she was done, Jennie walked over to Lisa lightly rubbing her arm.

"Hey." Jennie softly said, drawing Lisa gaze to hers.

Lisa smiled slightly at her as she buttoned up her pants.

"I'm sorry. I should have told you that I know David. I just didn't think."

"No, it's okay. You didn't know hell I didn't even know he'd show up on our doorstep." Lisa smiled her hand coming up and caressing Jennie cheek.

At the touch of her hand, Jennie closed her eyes, savouring her last few minutes with Lisa and the sweet memory of their pool playtime. When she opened her eyes, Lisa was staring at her with such love and desire that she felt like she was going to explode.

"So I...um...guess I should go home," she said sadly, not wanting to leave.

'No, stay.'

"Yeah I guess so." Lisa sadly agreed.

They stared at each other for a few more minutes and then Jennie grabbed Lisa's head and brought her mouth down, kissing her like she hadn't kissed her in years. Lisa's arms immediately wrapped

around her and drew her petite body closer as she once again was sucked in by her passionate assault. Lisa moaned as her tongue played with her and she felt her instantaneous response, as her lower body hummed with anticipation.

When she pulled back Lisa was breathless and she frowned at her, reaching down she adjusted her now aching hard on. "Thanks that was just what I needed before I go before my jailer."

She laughed, "Don't be silly, David isn't your jailer."

"He's going to kill me, Jennie." Lisa said it so gloomily that she couldn't help but tease her. She was just too cute and sexy when she pouted.

"Ah pooh, no he won't. Just explain everything to him and I'll be over tomorrow my usual time and I'll talk to him." Jennie is slinking her arms around her neck, "I'll tell him that you had no choice that - I seduced you," Jennie whispered and then licked the outer rim, making her shiver with lust.

When she pulled back, Lisa was grinning at her, "Well that is true."

Smiling at each other, they meet in the middle to indulge in their last kiss of the night, which was as hot and seductive as the first. When they pulled away, they gazed at each other. Each of them held the hint of lust and discontent in their eyes. Neither wanted to be separated from the other, but each knew that was the way it had to be. They slowly walked to the gate, holding hands, their eyes riveted to one another. Jennie opened the gate and turned around to gaze at her one last time.

'I love you.'

"I'll miss you." She softly said as her soul screamed at her to stay. She smiled tenderly and turned away walking down the path to the driveway.

"Jennie, wait." Lisa called out.

She spun around, her heart beating madly. "What?" she asked breathlessly. '

Just say it and I promise I'll say it back.'

"I don't want you walking home." Lisa reached into her left pocket and pulled out a set of keys. Lisa threw them at her and she caught them. "Take the BMW, home, school wherever, I just don't want you walking around by yourself. Understand? Promise me!" Her eyes were hard and drilling into her, waiting for her promise.

Jennie released the breath she had been holding and held back her disappointment; no words of love, just concern for her well-being, she sighed, "Okay Lisa, I promise."

Nearing the car, she opened the door and then called out over her shoulder not caring who heard her, "I'll see you tomorrow lover!"

'Yeah if I'm still alive.

' Lisa watched as she got in and started the car up, and then proceeded to peel out of the driveway. She flinched at her recklessness and wondered who the hell taught her how to drive.

Lisa turned around and faced the house, taking a deep breath her feet started to move her to where she really didn't want to go.

"Okay....I can do this. I'll just explain the situation to him. He's a smart man; he'll understand, and if worse comes to worse, I'll grovel and beg for his forgiveness like the dog that I am."

***

David was standing in the darkened hallway watching the young lovers at the pool. He couldn't believe what he walked in on. Lalisa and Jennie! David calculated the last time he saw her, which was last year on her...yes it was her seventeenth birthday. Mentally taking note of the day's date, that would mean she was still seventeen, granted her birthday was in a couple of days, but still it rankled his fatherly concern that his adoptive daughter was having intimate relations with a woman who was eight years older than her.

He remembered the first time he had met her; it was six years ago when he came for his annual visit. Every year he flew to the states

to see his children and granddaughter, and visit his brother Jeffrey who lived in LA. He remembered it quite clearly, he had been at William's dorm badgering him about his poor school grades, when the door had flown open and a little blond-haired girl ran in at full speed and jumped on William's back, pounding him with her little fists and yelling at him, that he had forgotten her birthday.

At first, he thought that William had gotten himself into trouble, until he took a closer look at her and saw that she was too old for that, and he relaxed. William went on with the introductions and he learned that she was the sister of one of his friends and that their parents had recently died along with two other brothers. David' heart had broken at hearing that and, ironically, it had instantly made him think of Lalisa.

When David heard how her brother Riley wasn't much of a guardian, that sparked his own paternal instincts to protect her and help her anyway he could. And he set out to get to know her and help guide her and her brother in any way he could. They instantly formed a bond, he and Jennie, and she quickly became like a daughter to him. He would call her all the time, making sure she was going to school and behaving. They talked about her family and how much she missed them. He felt honoured that she felt comfortable with him to talk about that, because he knew from William, that she didn't discuss that with anyone. Maybe it was the distance between them that made it easier for her, nevertheless, she became a part of his heart and one of his children, sadly more so than his own flesh and blood daughter.

Carla. His heart was heavy with guilt and sadness when he thought of her. They never had a good relationship; she was his first-born, and much to David's surprise, the most troublesome. Carla never appreciated anything he had ever tried to do for her. He sent her to the best schools and always made sure she had everything she could possibly want.

But that was where he erred. She became spoiled and a brat. Always wanting more, always wanting things that she could not have. Always demanding and selfish, it was hard for him to admit, but she was an embarrassment to the family's good name.

Things used to be simple, so he thought. He and Thomas were best friends who happily married their heart's desires. He remembered when Mary told Thomas that she was pregnant, it was the same time that he found out that Elizabeth was pregnant. The four of them had gone out to celebrate, and as the women went to bed later that night, he and Thomas had sat in the study of his home and made a pact that their first born would wed. The arrangement had been struck and the paperwork was completed that night.

Yes, they had been drunk and yes, their wives were appalled by the idea of an arranged marriage saying that it was barbaric and not fair to the children. But he and Thomas had been adamant, each wanting their families to be joined by marriage.

When both Lalisa and Carla were born only a week away, they had been ecstatic. David and Thomas looked forward to the inevitable union.

But time passed, David and Elizabeth both grew concerned over Carla's cruel temperament. It was on her thirteenth birthday that David realized he could not burden Lalisa with a wife who was so heartless and unkind.

They had thrown her a party and she had done nothing but complain about everything, from the food to the gifts that she had received. He clearly remembered her ridiculing one of her less fortunate guests that had given her a doll. The doll had been a bit straggly and Carla had yelled at her, saying that she was poor and had no business being at her party and giving her a dirty used gift. The poor girl had run home crying and Carla had sat back, smiling and laughing.

It was later that night that he had sat Thomas down and told him straight out to reconsider the agreement. That he was embarrassed and ashamed of his daughter and what she had become. He told him that she was not fit to marry a pig, and that he loved Lalisa too much to encumber her with a wife such as Carla.

But Thomas shook his head no; steady in his resolve to bring the families together. He laughed, and told David not to worry, that although Carla did indeed have a sour disposition that it wouldn't

matter; Lalisa was a strong and would have no problem keeping Carla in her place and out of trouble. David had seriously doubted it and urged his friend to reconsider but he refused.

When his wife Elizabeth died three years later, it was the worst day of David's life. He hadn't thought he could feel any more wretched than he did that day. But he was wrong, and his grief was only enhanced by the impudence of his daughter.

It had been the day of the funeral, and they had stood at Elizabeth's grave in the rain, Carla was sixteen and William was thirteen. William had been holding on to his hand, crying for the loss of his dear mother and Carla did nothing but mock him, telling him that he was a baby because he was crying.

David had turned angry bitter eyes to his first born and told her that she was a callous selfish girl, with a heart as cold as stone. She had looked at him empty and distant, laughing she said flippantly that she didn't care what he thought and that all she wanted was her mother's jewellery and her share of the will. That was all that she cared about and he had been floored.

He smirked remembering William's reaction to her words; he had stepped up to her and slapped her across the face telling her that she was a bitch. He of course had been stunned along with Carla, but he didn't scold him, he simply pulled him back to his side protectively and hugged him closer, oddly proud that he did what he did.

The next incident that stuck in his mind, was when his best friends, Thomas and Mary died. It was only a year after Elizabeth passed away and Lalisa had been seventeen. David had been devastated by their deaths and had immediately insisted that Lalisa move in with them, which she did.

The night after the funeral Lalisa had come into his study wanting to talk to him. Lisa stood there like a young aristocrat with her head held high, her hardened sad eyes staring back at him like an adult, and told him that she knew David had told Thomas she didn't have to marry Carla, but that Lalisa knew it was her father's wish to combine the families and so she insisted on following through with

the arrangement.

David had tried to get Lisa to change her mind, the love loss that she had for his daughter was not blind to anyone, including Lalisa, who was quite aware of Carla's selfish and nasty nature, having been on the receiving end of it many times herself. But she didn't care; she loved her father and wanted to fulfil her father's wishes. Both David and William had argued with her, vehemently trying to persuade her, from what they believed would be a mistake. But Lalisa, like her father, had refused, and eventually David gave in, and they married.

As he expected, the marriage was a disaster and the guilt he felt for the way Carla treated Lalisa was almost unbearable. When David found out that she was pregnant a spark of hope had echoed in his heart. Perhaps a baby would bring out her softer side; perhaps she would change. But she hadn't. If anything, she got worse. She became meaner and more bitter. More and more she taunted Lalisa, throwing the affairs with her numerous lovers in her face, knowing that she would never divorce her for the sake of the family.

David thought the treatment of her husband was abhorrent, but it was the treatment of her daughter that was beyond repugnant, and David was baffled as to how a woman could be so cruel to her own flesh and blood. She had never wanted anything to do with Kathy. She blamed her for the loss of her figure, lovers, and for giving Lalisa something that she always wanted: a family, something that, for whatever reason, Carla had never wanted.

That was the most disturbing thing for David, that she was so adamant about not wanting a family. She never wanted to marry Lalisa. Oh, she lusted after her and loved the money that came with, but she hated the idea of family. David never understood that. He and Elizabeth always loved the children and stressed the importance of family to them, so he could never comprehend the origin of Carla's aversion.

David shook his head clearing the memories that left him feeling like a failure. His eyes were drawn to the photo on the wall, William, Lalisa and Kathy, all hugging and smiling in his backyard in England. He smiled. These three were his salvation. These three

children showed him that he was not a complete failure at being a parent. They were all wonderful, warm and selfless people. But he wasn't blind, and he knew that Lalisa changed drastically after marrying Carla. She became a work alcoholic, always thinking about Kathleen's future, which was wonderful, but she lost herself along with way. The carefree happy young woman that he knew disappeared.

Which lead his thoughts back to Jennie. Jennie was much like Kathleen and William, and even Lalisa herself had once been, warm, caring, and a bit reckless...a free spirit. She was a loving person with a strong sense of will and spirit, a heart as open and pure as the sun, and her soul was both angelic and devilish at the same time. She was most assuredly a handful, he had always thought so, but she was also incredibly attuned to life and knew how to live it to the fullest.

The more David thought about his adoptive daughter and his in law, the more he started to think that perhaps she was just what he needed. Perhaps it would be Jennie that would draw Lalisa back into the light of love and life, back to her daughter and family, where she belonged. And Lalisa would undoubtedly give Jennie the security and direction, and the love of a family that she so desperately needed and craved.

Watching them outside in the black of night, talking softly to each other, the feather light caresses and touches, the kiss that steamed up his own glasses just by watching, it was plain to see that they had a deep intimacy with each other, an intimacy that went beyond the physical.

As he watched Jennie leave and the look of desolation on Lalisa' face, he smiled. Yes, it was a very suitable match but one that would have to wait until Jennie was of age. Of course, he would have to scold them for their impetuousness; he couldn't resist making them suffer a little bit. But eventually he would acquiesce to the union, and he hoped that was exactly what it would turn out to be.

Seeing Lisa walking toward the house with her hands in her pockets, head lowered, and shoulders slumped, muttering to herself,

David turned and headed toward the front library a mischievous smile on his face.

***

Jennie was amazingly happy and carefree when she got home. She knew why though, it was because she now had a better understanding of where she stood with Lisa, and she had a better understanding of her own feelings, which really was the most crucial thing because if she had a better understanding of her own feelings, it would make it much easier to get Lisa to see things her way.

She giggled as she opened the door and stepped inside. The look on David's face was priceless and honestly, she did not for one second feel bad for Lisa and whatever she was going through right now. That woman had way too much humdrum in her life, and she needed a little dishevelling every now and then. Of course, she wouldn't let her take the blame, because really she was the one that pushed her, and she planned on taking full responsibility for her own actions. She didn't want David to be angry with Lisa.

"Jennie? Where have you been?"

Riley came out of the kitchen after hearing the door open, seeing his sister staring at the wall in a daze, he walked over to her, touching her shoulder lightly, "Jennie?"

She jumped her hand flying over her heart, "Riley! God, you scared me."

He smiled at her apologetically, "I'm sorry, you just looked sort of out of it, are you okay?"

She smiled at him warmly, and he was taken back, by the sincerity of that smile, "I'm great Riley thanks, how are you?" She asked walking into the kitchen and grabbing a coke she sat down at the counter.

Riley followed behind her a little unsure of exactly what was going on. She seemed genuinely interested in how he was doing, and it

was so different from the usual fake sarcasm he got from her, that he didn't know how to respond.

Jennie laughed at his expression, "I'm serious Riley, how are you? What's going on with your life?"

Riley watched her then chuckled, "yeah right this is where you seem all sincere and get me to tell you, and then you're going to make fun of me or laugh at me in some way or another, right?"

Her eyebrow crinkled,

'have I always been a bitch to my brother?'

Her facial expression changed, and she looked at him seriously, "No Riley this isn't some ploy to make fun of you, I'm truly interested in knowing how you are."

"Yeah right." He spun around looking for her comrades in crime, "Then Alex will jump out and say something to degrade me."

As his continued to search the room, Jennie shook her head at him, feeling awful. "Riley, Alex isn't here. And I'm not joking I swear on mom and dad."

He looked at her, hard, trying to ascertain if she was telling the truth. "You're serious? You really want to know."

'This was why she was always sarcastic with him he's so slow.'

She rolled her eyes, "Yes Riley I really want to know."

Riley relaxed and smiled at her; he sat down across from her at the counter. "I'm pretty good; actually, I think I might be getting a promotion," he said proudly.

"That's great Riley! Good for you."

He smiled at her, "Thanks Jennie."

He continued to study her; she was awfully friendly and happy today, maybe a little too friendly and happy. It was definitely a

strange occurrence that never happened between them, which led him to wonder just what the hell she'd been up too.

He frowned, "Jennie where have you been for the last couple of days? You didn't come home Friday, you were gone all day Saturday and then yesterday. What have you been getting into?" he asked, bracing himself for her answer.

She chuckled, "Don't sound so scared Riley. Actually I've been working."

'Yeah working at getting laid.

' She smiled at her thoughts.

Riley looked at her with disbelief, "Working? You? Working?"

She frowned at him, "Yes me."

He didn't know if believed her, but she seemed so miffed that he didn't believe her that she had to be telling the truth, he smiled at her. Finally, his sister was doing something productive

"Oh... that's great Jennie, what kind of job is it?" he asked.

She smiled, "Babysitting."

Riley blankly looked at her. '

No, he couldn't have heard her right.'

"Excuse me?"

Looking at him, her smile gone, she answered him, "I said I was babysitting."

He just continued to stare back at her blankly, and after a few seconds ticked by him began to laugh, loudly. "Babysitting! You're babysitting!"

"What's so funny about that?" she asked quietly.

"What's funny about that? Come on Jennie., You, the poster child for juvenile delinquency, is babysitting some poor schmuck's kid!" He laughed even harder, tears forming in his eyes at the very suggestion. "What are you teaching her? How to pick locks and steal cars?"

He was laughing so hard, his face was red and tears were running down his face. Jennie sat there, watching him laugh at her, and she was so mad she just wanted to rip his tonsils out and shove em' up his nose, 'that would shut him up.'

"I don't think it's funny Riley. I'm perfectly capable of taking care of a young child." She leaned forward, "You're the one that seems to be unable to do that," she sneered, shutting him up immediately.

He leaned forward and sneered back at her, "Oh yeah, well if the kid's a brat like you were then you'll see how much of a pain in the ass it is!"

Jennie stood up and slammed her palms down on the table, "Oh yeah...well at least I won't be an asshole and ignore her and treat her like a nobody!" she screamed at him.

Riley stood up and slammed his hands down on the table leaning forward, "Oh yeah, well maybe if she was nicer then you wouldn't have to be an asshole and ignore her; maybe you'd want to talk to her!"

They stared at each, red faced and fuming, and then Jennie stood up straight. "You know Riley, I though for once that maybe, just maybe, we could sit down and have a normal healthy brother sister conversation, but I can see now that you are too childish for that." She turned away and briskly walked out of the kitchen. "I'll be in my room."

Riley was about to reply but shut his mouth. He sat down dejectedly in his chair and felt bad. He was honestly enjoying their conversation until he laughed at her. But he couldn't help it. The idea that his wild sister was caring for another human being, that was not herself, was just so absurd he couldn't help but laugh.

But she looked really upset that he didn't believe her and that he laughed at her. There was definitely something different about her; she did seem ...happier and more content. Just what kind of babysitting job was this?

Riley being a military man, automatically assumed the worse,

'Something's going on and I'm going to find out what it is.'

***

"Rupert I...um...don't know what to say." Lisa said sitting down on the couch with a glass of whiskey in her hand. She figured the best thing was to just sit here and take her punishment then go upstairs and hide.

"Lalisa, what was Jennie doing here and how do you know Jennie for that matter?" David had a drink in one hand and was pacing, making Lisa feel like the naughty schoolboy being scolded by the teacher.

"Um...ahem...well, Jennie's..." she fidgeted in her seat. '

Spit it out Lisa! You're a grown woman for god's sake in your own home!'

"ummm...."

David stopped pacing and fixed him with a glare tapping his foot impatiently, "Yes...yes...Jennie's what?"

"She's Kathy's new babysitter."

David blanched. Had his in law lost her mind! "Her babysitter!"

Lisa nodded and gulped down her drink quickly, then got up and walked over to the credenza and poured himself another one. She drank that one down, and then turned around to face David. "Look Rupert, I know what you're thinking and believe me, I thought the same thing, at first. Honestly, I tried to stay away from her I swear, just ask Mino."

"William knows about this too?" That David found very interesting, knowing how protective he was of Jennie.

"Yes, in fact it was Mino's idea!" Lisa said.

"It was William's idea that you assault her in your pool?"

"Yes...what...NO... Mino was the one that suggested that she baby-sit for Kathy." Lisa ran a hand through her hair and started to pace as David sat down, calmly watching her, enjoying her discomfort.

"Rupert I, look...I really don't know what to say here okay! Frankly I'm so embarrassed right now I'm at a loss for words." Lisa threw her hands up in the air, not knowing what to do.

"As you should be Lalisa, Jennie is seventeen and I do believe that is illegal."

"I know that." She said annoyed.

"She's also extremely...wild." David pointed out.

Lisa smiled, erotic memories filtering through her mind. "I know that too." She softly said.

Seeing Lalisa in never-never land, David coughed getting her attention, "Lalisa, I know that you don't know this, but Jennie is like a daughter to me. I've known her since she was eleven and knowing her status with her family and brother, I took it upon myself to watch over her and protect her. So, I feel it is my duty, not only as Kathleen's grandfather, but also as Jennie's surrogate father to ask you, just where you plan on going with this...relationship."

'Okay to the point, that's good, I can do that.'

Lisa grabbed a chair and pulled it up to the couch. She sat down and looked David straight in the eye. "Rupert, I understand how you feel honestly, I do. And let me assure you that Jennie has been nothing but the most concerned and mature adult when dealing with Kathy. In fact, she's amazing. Kathy loves her to death and..."

'Do I say it? Do I tell the man that has not only been a second father to

me but also to Jennie what I really want to say? Yes, I can.'

"I love her." She sat back in the chair, "There I've said...okay, I love her! And I don't care what you say Rupert I'm going to be with her, and if I had it my way, she'd stay with me and Kathy forever. If I could, if I thought it was the right thing to do, I would ask her to marry me when she turns eighteen. But I'm not going to, and you want to know why?"

'This was getting interesting.'

David nodded.

"Because even though I love her I want her to experience life to the fullest and do whatever she wants to do, If she wants to go away to college then that's what I want for her too. It would hurt like hell to be away from her, but I would do it, because I want what's best for her."

Inside David was bursting with joy. He had no idea that things had gotten that far along. He had seen the attraction, felt the heat between them even from a distance, but to hear Lalisa say that she would marry her when she had clearly said in the past that she would never marry again was something that David was not expecting.

He had to be sure; he put his drink down, "Lalisa. Listen to me very carefully. I love you like my daughter and I love Kathleen, you two have filled my life with so much joy that I cannot even describe it." His voice lowered, "I know that Carla was horrible to you both and I somehow feel responsible for that."

Lisa shook her head, "No Rupert that wasn't your fault, I knew what I was getting myself into when I married her."

"Yes, but nonetheless she was still my daughter, and I can't help but feel somewhat responsible for her actions towards you two, however that's all water under the bridge, so they say. "

He stood up, "Lalisa, I love Jennie and I know that she is an incredible woman. I say woman, because all though she is young

she has dealt with so much in her young life that she has matured beyond her years, but that does not mean that she is mentally ready for a relationship of this magnitude. She's vulnerable, she's lonely, and she is extremely needy, all things that would make her easy prey to a man who has a plentitude of experience when it comes to love and sex."

Lisa stood up her face a mask of anger, "You think I'm using her? You think I would hurt her?"

"No, I don't I know you Lalisa and I know that consciously you would not, but what about the things you can't control. What about her friends, what about Riley for that matter, do you think that they will just sit by while you, her senior of eight years, becomes intimately involved with her?"

Lisa looked at him,

'All right, David doesn't know of Jennie's...activities, well I'm not going to be the one to tell him. What he doesn't know won't hurt him.'

Personally, David didn't care one snot about her friends or Riley; he just wanted to see the depths of Lalisa' devotion because that was what mattered. Because in the end she was the one that could hurt Jennie the most, by discarding her and that was what he was worried about.

Lisa walked right up to David and looked him in the eye, her voice was steely when she spoke and her eyes were hard, "Rupert, I don't give a shit what her friends or Riley has to say. Jennie and I want to be together; we love each other and I'm not going to let someone other than Jennie herself get in the way of us being a family."

David smiled, "Good. That's what I wanted to hear." He walked over to the credenza and poured himself another drink.

Lisa watched him; relaxing when she realized what game David had been playing. "You're not mad." She stated.

David turned around, "No on the contrary I'm quite pleased. Jennie is a wonderful person, and she would make an excellent addition to

our family." He smiled and Lisa smiled back, glad that things were going so smoothly.

"But..."

'Why is there always a but?'

David eyes hardened, "That still does not make it right Lalisa she is only seventeen. I insist that you wait until she becomes of age, to...proceed in your relationship."

"Don't worry Rupert, we haven't...proceeded, that far." Lisa plopped down on the couch, her face a mask of frustration.

His eyebrow rose and he studied Lisa, looking for any sign of deceit, "No."

Lisa sighed, "No. I told Jennie we had to wait. It didn't feel right to me."

She looked so unhappy about that, that David turned away smirking. "Good. I'm glad to hear that you have not totally lost your senses."

Lisa harrumphed.

David put down his drink and grabbed his bags; "Well I'm going to head upstairs. I'm extremely tired, I'll see you tomorrow. Should I pick Kathleen up from school?"

"No Jennie does. They should be home around three-fifteen."

David stopped and turned to her, shock on his face, "You let Jennie drive?"

Lisa frowned, "Yeah."

"Lalisa, have you seen Jennie drive?" David asked.

Lisa's frown became darker, "Yeah."

David sighed again and turned, his hand on the doorknob, he

stopped again, "Have you, um met Riley yet?" he asked.

Lisa shook her head no.

David smiled then started to laugh heartily, he walked out of the room, leaving Lisa to ponder his reaction.

Ch 14

It was 3:15 on the dot, when Jennie pulled into the driveway. She got out of the car and opened the back door, leaning in she unbuckled Kathy's car seat.

"Kat, how come you wait for me to do this, but you don't for your daddy?" she asked.

Kathy smiled, "Because it annoys daddy." She was kicking her feet back and forth looking very pleased with herself.

Jennie smirked at her, "Oh, and you like annoying your daddy?" She removed the seat belt and Kathy jumped out and then jumped out onto the driveway.

She shook her head, "Uncle Mino said that I should annoy daddy any time I get because it's good for her, plus it's fun." She giggled and Jennie shook her head at her chuckling.

They walked up to the porch and Jennie opened the door.

David was walking out of the kitchen when Kathy saw him. "GRANDPA!"

He had just enough time to put his tea on the table before she threw herself at him. He picked her up and then twirled her around smiling at her happily. "How is my sweet Kathleen? Did you have a good day?" he asked.

Kathy frowned at him, "I hate that name Grandpa!" she whined, and David chuckled at her ruffling her hair. "I know you do sweetheart."

Remembering Jennie, Kathy squirmed in David arms until he put her down; she than ran over to Jennie and taking her by the hand dragged her over to him. "Look Grandpa this is my new best friend, Jennie! She takes care of me and daddy."

Jennie blushed slightly, her mind wandering to just how good she was at taking care of Lisa and then of course to David' walking in on that. Smiling sheepishly at him she stepped up as he opened his arms to hug her. They smiled warmly at each other and kissed each other on the cheek.

"Hi David."

He pulled back, his fingers moving a strand of hair away from her face so he could look at her better.

"Hello Jennie."

Kathy watched them and her little face puckered in confusion, "You guys know each other?"

David smiled, "Yes, I've known Jennie for a long-time sweetheart." He looked at her lovingly; his conversation with Lalisa last night running through his mind, and his smile was bright and happy. "We haven't talked in a while." He said, scolding her slightly like the father he felt he was.

She shook her head, eyes downcast, "I know."

He lifted her chin, "We'll have some tea and chat, yes?"

"Yes." She smiled, still blushing, knowing what that conversation was going to be about.

"Wow this is cool!" Kathy exclaimed jumping up and down. "Grandpa's here, Jennie's here, all we need now is Uncle Mino and Daddy, and the whole family would be together!' She was twirling around so excited to have everyone that she loved together at the same time, just like a real family.

David watched her, his heart both sad and joyful. Little imp had been missing so much already and she was so young. His eyes then turned back to Jennie. She was laughing and watching Kathleen, her eyes misty with love and happiness.

Jennie and Kathleen had so much in common. Both were yearning for a true sense of home and family. He realized, even though he

had tried as best as he could to give Jennie a sense of family by talking and listening to her and just being there for her a way a father should be, that it hadn't made a difference. She, like Kathleen, had been missing something else.

It took the love of a good, decent man and a small mischievous child to give her what she most needed. His heart was heavy with love for both of them and he was more determined than ever to see that they both got what they needed and deserved, a family.

"Kat sweetie, why don't you go upstairs and put your bathing suit on. You can swim a little before dinner while Grandpa David and I catch up with each other, okay?" Jennie said.

Kathy stopped spinning the second bathing suit came out of Jennie's mouth; she jumped higher and clapped her hands together. "YAY I get to swim again too!"

She ran up the stairs as fast as her little feet would carry her.

"Wow this day just keeps getting better and better!"

***

Kathy was happily wading in the pool kicking her feet around and splashing the water as she played with a toy submarine. David and Jennie sat at the patio table drinking their tea. Neither one had spoken yet, both a bit uncomfortable with what happened last night.

Finally, Jennie just went for it... "David, about last night..."

"Jennie, it's okay. I talked to Lalisa last night and I understand. I'm not mad."

She smiled, "Really, you're not?"

"No, but I am a little upset that you two are so...impatient, but I understand, it wasn't that long ago that I was also young and in love." His warm smile told Jennie that he was remembering his wife.

She smiled at him, and then froze. '

In love...what does that mean? Did Lisa say something to David?'

She cleared her throat and looked into her teacup, twirling her spoon. "Did...did Lisa say that?" she asked quietly.

David saw the tension in her body waiting for him to answer her, '

so they haven't told each other yet, huh? Well, I can't be the one to do that. Ah children were so foolish when it came to love, even though they

think

they knew it all they didn't.'

He sat forward and took her hands in his, smiling at her, "Jennie, do you love Lalisa?"

She quickly responded, squeezing his hand, "I do David, more than anything in this world," she blushed and looked back down at her tea, "I had no idea my heart could feel so full of love for someone else. It's a little scary."

"And you haven't told her?" he asked even though he knew the answer.

She shook her head, "No, it's so new and so...different, that I, I just wanted to understand it better myself."

'See foolish. They're afraid, afraid to share what they are feeling in their hearts because they fear rejection.'

David shook his head sighing,

'ah children.'

"Jennie. I know that this is very new for you, and I also know that it's new for Lalisa as well. But you must not be afraid to tell her how you feel. I assure you; you will not be disappointed with her answer." He squeezed her hand reassuringly.

Her eyes shot up to his fast and hopeful, "really?" her voice squeaked with the joy she felt in her soul and in her heart.

David smiled, all the love he felt for her shining back at her, "Really."

"Wow-oh, pool time again!" Mino came sauntering in the back yard.

"UNCLE Mino!" Kathy screeched, so loud they all flinched. "YOU'RE HERE, YOU'RE HERE!"

"Yes, Pet your beloved Uncle has arrived!" he said with a flourish, bowing to her and making her giggle.

"Was he always a ham?" Jennie asked David.

"Unfortunately, yes." He replied, smiling at son's dramatics.

Mino turned to them surprised, and then a big smile lit his face, "Da! I didn't know you were coming in."

He walked over to them, and David stood up. They hugged each other affectionately, and Jennie smiled. Which was dissimilar to what she was used to feeling, because usually when she witnessed the open love, they had for each other it made her feel sad and envious. But today as she looked on, she didn't feel sad or envious, she felt...like a part of it.

"Yes well, everyone had been avoiding me, so I was concerned that something was wrong, so I flew right over." David said, and they sat down.

"What are you doing here William, shouldn't you be at work?" David asked.

Jennie started to giggle, "William?"

Mino huffed, "Yeah what's so funny?"

She was laughing all out now, "I didn't know your name was William, William." She snickered finding it funny, she didn't know why, really, who would name their kid Mino, of course he had to

have a real name, she just never thought about it before.

He leaned forward and snickered back at her, "Oh yeah...Elizabeth."

She shut up instantly and David turned to her a big smile on his face, "Your given name is Elizabeth?"

She grumbled, "Yeah, just don't let it get around."

Mino laughed at her, "Oh you think Jennie is better!"

She kicked him under the table, "Shut up WILLIAM!"

"Ouch!"

"Now, now, children. Jennie, Elizabeth is a fine name. You should be very proud of it, in fact that was my wife's name," David proudly said making Jennie smile as she felt a sudden kinship with a woman that she never met.

"So, William why are you not at work?" David turned to his son again.

Mino took a cigarette out of his pocket and put it in his mouth he reached back inside his pocket to pull out his lighter, only to have the cigarette swiped out of his mouth, and David glaring at him.

"Da!" Mino whined, "I'm a grown man for fu..."

David slapped him upside the head, "Watch your language!"

Jennie giggled at the look on Mino's face. "Yeah, William, why aren't you at work?" she said, enjoying teasing him.

"Well...Elizabeth," he sneered.

Jennie frowned... "Okay I'll stop if you stop".

"Deal" They both nodded their agreement.

Mino sat back in his chair. "My closing is today, so I'm meeting Lisa here and then we're going." He checked his watch, "She should be here soon."

"Closing? William, you bought a house and didn't tell me? That's wonderful son, I'm so proud of you." David smacked him on the back and Jennie almost laughed at the slow blush that appeared on Mino's face. "Thanks Da."

Jennie looked at her own watch, they had been out here for an hour already. "Kathy!" she called out, "time to come out of the pool sweetie and get cleaned up!"

"Otay Jennie!"

"Are you guys staying for dinner Mino?" she asked, picking up the teacups.

"I don't think so luv, but we should be back no later than nine."

"Okay, I'm going to go and get Kathy's dinner ready."

"Can we have macaroni and cheese again Jennie?" Kathy asked as she stood with a towel wrapped around her, shivering as the cool late afternoon air blew over her pruned wet skin.

Jennie chuckled at her, "We had that last night sweetie."

"Yeah, but it was really good. Please? Pretty, pretty please?" She was hopping around.

"Okay, macaroni and cheese it is! Go get cleaned up then meet me in the kitchen."

"Otay." Kathy ran inside the house.

"And dry your feet!" Jennie called out, knowing how much Lisa hated that, she followed Kathy into the house, closing the door behind her.

David who had sat back and watched their interaction, knew he had made the right decision by giving Lalisa his approval.

"Brilliant William, just brilliant bringing Jennie into the household."

"Thanks Da, I wasn't too sure at first. You know Jennie can be

very...ahem, straightforward." He looked at David his eyebrow going up and down, "if you know what I mean."

David shuffled in his seat, "Yes, I think I do son. Thank you."

Mino chuckled, "She never stood a chance. But it was amusing to see her try."

David smiled happy that his family was finally coming together.

***

The front door opened, and she stepped inside. Lisa put her briefcase on the table, took her jacket off and loosened her tie. What a shitty day! She had nothing but trouble at the office, everything that could go wrong did.

First Cordy called in sick.

'Sick my ass, she had an audition.'

Secondly, the temp that filled in for her did nothing but walk around on eggshells all day, stuttering every time Lisa looked at her or told her something.

Thirdly, Lisa meeting with Chu Lee, the attorney for Mr. Wong, whom she was purchasing a new Ming vase from to replace the one that Kathy broke, played hardball and she had to dish out another fifty grand, more than what she wanted to pay.

Last but not least, she had a visit from someone named Sue Abrams, who turned out to be Parker's older sister, who always happened to be a lawyer. She had slapped a lawsuit on her or at least she tried too. Lisa had simply told her as coldly and deadly as possible, that if she thought that she could sue her then she had another thing coming, that if she proceeded with the lawsuit, she would have Parker arrested for attempted rape. Lisa told her she had witnesses; she told her that Jennie was hurt and had to go to the doctor for treatment, yeah lies but she didn't know that. Finally, she wrote her a check for twenty-five thousand dollars, she told her to take it and make sure that Parker never bothered them again. She wasn't stupid. It was probably what she was counting on to begin with.

She took a check and left.

So, fifty thousand dollars down, she comes home, tired that she had to spend the money on the vase, but not about Parker. In her eyes, it was money well spent, and she would gladly to it again. Now she was finally home and all she wanted to do was stay here, but she couldn't.

"Hey baby."

Lisa turned to the sultry voice, the tension in her body quickly switching from annoyance to desire. Her eyes traveled down her form, stopping here and there to admire her breasts and flat tummy, and then drove back up, meeting her amused gaze.

"See anything you like?" she asked huskily.

Lisa leered at her hotly as she finally stepped into the heaven of her arms and pressed her lithe body up. Lisa lowered her head, and Jennie greeted her with the most sensual kiss that she'd had since...oh, last night.

Lisa pulled back, squeezing her ass and pressing her further into her groin, "I like everything." Lisa purred as Jennie ran her hands soothingly up and down, "God that feels so good," the tension from the day drained away so easily by her touch.

"Oh, poor baby...bad day at the office?" Jennie asked, as she kissed her neck.

Lisa grunted, too relaxed now to bring up the day's annoyances, not that she would tell her about her little visit from Parker's sister. She didn't need to know that.

"Are you hungry?"

"Starving." Lisa said as her mouth clamped on to the base of her neck where her collarbone met, she suckled on it gently making Jennie moan, as her hands continued to squeeze her ass.

She laughed and then reluctantly pulled away when she heard the back door open.

"There you are. Ready?" Mino came walking in with David behind him.

Lisa sighed, 'I never get what I want.'

"No, just give me a few minutes." Lisa winked at Jennie and climbed the stairs.

"God she's worse." Mino complained.

Jennie slapped him on the arm and frowned at him, "Leave her alone. She had a rough day."

"Oh poor baby." Mino said then he leaned into her, whispering in her ear, "I bet you want to make it better for her, don't you?"

Jennie rolled her eyes, giggling inside, "Shut up, William."

"Hey!" Mino said annoyed that she reneged on their deal.

"Grandpa, Uncle Mino, come quick I got to show you what I made for you." Kathy called out from the kitchen.

They looked at Jennie, "She made something for you guys, go see."

'Yes, hurry now...go...kitchen.'

"Oh? Marvelous." David walked happily into the kitchen and Mino stood there looking at her, "Aren't you coming pet?" he asked.

"Me, no, I've seen it, besides, I have to go to the bathroom," she said as she started to walk up the stairs.

Mino watched her go, a smirk on his face, 'sure you do.' Then he turned and headed to the kitchen.

Jennie ran up the stairs at full speed, around the corner and down the hall till she stood in front of Lisa's door. She didn't knock; instead, she turned the knob slowly and peaked inside.

Lisa was standing at her dresser, she still had on her dress pants, but her chest was gloriously naked as she searched for a shirt to put

on. Quietly Jennie closed the door and locked it. She tiptoed up behind her, pressed against her strong back, and wrapping her arms around her waist, littering her back with kisses.

Lisa's hands immediately rested on top of hers and she looked back at her, feeling her body respond once again to her closeness.

Slowly Jennie moved her hands down until she reached Lisa pants. Her hands glided down and over her hardening shaft and rubbed slowly up and down. Lisa closed her eyes, her mind totally attuned to Jennie body pressed up against her and the feel of her strong hand moving on her cock.

"Baby don't. I have to go, Mino's waiting," she said lamely, making no move to halt her actions.

Jennie turned her around and got on her knees unzipping her pants, Lisa watched as she pulled her cock out. Her tongue came out and she sensually licked her lips causing Lisa to moan deep in her throat.

"Shhh...don't talk, just feel." Jennie whispered Lisa words back to her, right before her mouth engulfed the head.

"Oh god." Lisa said her head falling back and her hands lifted to Jennie head, encouraging her.

Jennie started slow, pumping her as she concentrated on the head, sucking slowly then licking the top. As Lisa fingers gripped her head harder, she increased her pace, pumping faster and taking more in her mouth.

Jennie began to hum as she scraped her teeth lightly around her mushroom head and then she drew it in her mouth, sucking hard.

"Ohhhhh yesss.."

Lisa was in heaven; there was no other word for it. She knew that the pleasure she would receive from this would be great, but she didn't know it would feel this good. She already felt like was going to cum and Jennie only just began, she had only taken half of her length in her luscious mouth and already Lisa felt the urgency to

slam herself further into her hot wet mouth.

"Jennie."

Jennie relaxed her jaw and took more in as her hand pumped faster, she looked up and smiled around her cock, and then deep throated her. Feeling the head hit her tonsils, she hummed louder, and the vibration was strong as it sizzled up Lisa's entire body making her shudder. Her balls tightened and she came. Her hands dug into Jennie hair as she rode out her orgasm. Jennie happily drank down her semen, loving the taste, loving that she was a part of her, that she was inside of her someway, and she licked her clean making sure to get every precious creamy drop.

Lisa opened her eyes and looked down watching her little tongue slide all over her shaft. Lisa tugged on her hair to get her attention; she stopped licking and looked up.

Jennie ran her hand up and down, "Feel better baby?" she asked huskily, her own body throwing her in a tailspin with the pleasurable throbbing in between her legs.

Smiling ruthlessly at her, Lisa lifted her up, and yanked her shorts down to her knees, then without a word threw her on the bed and pushed her knees up to her chest. Holding her knees with one hand, Lisa dropped to her knees and ran her finger up her wet cleft, watching as her nub throbbed, and she lowered her head, her tongue coming out and licking her from the top of her slit all the way down to her rosebud.

Jennie grabbed a pillow and threw it over her face to hide her screams of passion. Lisa was ruthless as her mouth and tongue made love to her. She did not start slow and sweet, as she had, instead she plowed right in and attacked her honey pot with a vengeance. Lisa pumped three fingers inside of her then ruthlessly pulled them out and pushed them back inside, as her mouth sucked on her nub and her tongue tapped her clit fast and hard. Lisa's fingers and her tongue were in synch with each other as faster and faster they moved, faster and faster....

Jennie was screaming into the pillow her head thrashing back and

forth and then suddenly, her body tightened and arched up and she pressed herself further into her mouth and hand. Lisa grunted, pleased with the results and her powerful orgasm. She could feel every shiver, every muscle contracting around her fingers, and she just wanted to plunge inside of her and fuck her over and over again.

Lisa returned the favour and licked her clean then lowered her legs. She slowly massaged her thighs relaxing her muscles, making sure that she didn't get any cramps, and then she took off her shorts and panties and slid up her body. Lisa removed the pillow from her beautiful face and crushed her mouth to hers. Jennie's hand gripped her head as they mauled each other eagerly; totally consumed with one another and oblivious to what was going on around them.

Jennie wrapped her legs around Lisa waist and pushed against her, rubbing her pussy up and down her hardened cock. She was so excited, still so hot for Lisa, she bit her lip drawing blood, but she didn't care, she needed her so bad.

Frantically Jennie moved against her faster and faster, pressing herself harder and harder as their mouths continued to meld together, their tongues dueling for dominance.

She was so close...so close...so...

BANG BANG BANG

"HEY! Come on already! Don't think I don't know what you're doing in there! If you don't stop...playing ball and come out now I'm going to tell Da!"

Lisa growled angrily and Jennie shouted at the door, "Go away you tattletale. She'll be right out!"

She heard Mino curse under his breath and then the sound of footsteps walking away.

Lisa took her mouth again, as Jennie began moving her hips, sliding against her hard length. They moved faster and faster trying to reach the ultimate goal, trying to reach paradise.

"So close...so close baby..." Jennie said.

Lisa had been with her enough times to know, that Jennie's neck and collarbone were extremely sensitive, so she lowered her head to that spot and clamped down with her teeth drawing her skin into her mouth, she sucked hard as she thrusted against her one last time. But the animalistic act only fueled her own fire and Lisa came spilling her seed on her belly.

Jennie was right behind, her body quaking and rocking with another explosive orgasm and the feel of her hot cum on her stomach.

Lisa rolled over on her back and threw her arm across her eyes. After a few minutes her ragged breath calmed and returned to its normal speed as her heart continued to pump rapidly in her chest. "I think when I'm finally inside of you; it'll be the death of me."

Chuckling at Lisa, Jennie grabbed a shirt that was on the bed and cleaned off her belly then she threw it on the floor and rolled on to her side. Her eyes travelled over her body and face, and the tenderness she felt, the absolute love and joy she felt for this wonderful woman, was mind-blowing.

Jennie propped her arm up on the bed and rested her head on her palm, her other hand started playing with her nipple as her face crinkled, "What did Mino mean by playing ball?"

Lisa smiled, "I'll tell you later."

She sat up and crushed her lips to hers, then stood up, and smacked her on the ass. "I got to go."

"Ouch, Lisa, what is this obsession with my ass?" Jennie asked as she rubbed it.

Looking back, Lisa heart started pumping furiously in her chest. God Jennie was so stunning and sexy, sprawled out on her bed, half naked, her oh-so-kissable ass staring her in the face, she felt empowered, she felt like she belonged to her. She was suddenly overcome by the urgent need to control her, to possess her as no

man ever had. Her eyes twinkled with possessive lust, and she leered at her, taking her by surprise she jumped her, making her squeal, then rolled her on to her stomach, taking both of her ass cheeks in her hands she squeezed them and bit each one.

"Ow...Lisa, stop!" she laughed, she tried to kick her off, but it was hard, considering that she was sitting on her legs.

Lisa grabbed her hands and pulled them over her head, leaning down she whispered in her ear, her voice deep and seductive. "When I finally get to have you...all of you, I'm going to take you this way... from behind...hard and fast."

Lisa rubbed her groin against her cheeks and Jennie moaned at the hypnotic tone as she continued to seduce her with her hot words that set her on fire, words that made her want to do anything that she asked.

"I want to dominate you baby, show you that you belong to me and no one else."

Jennie moaned again and pushed up against her, she tilted her head to the side to peer at Lisa, "anything, anytime, anywhere." Jennie said, her voice oozing with passion and lust, her eyes sparkling back at her shining with devoted trust and promises of lustful obedience.

Lisa growled possessively and smashed her mouth against hers.

BANG BANG BANG

"Daddy, Uncle Mino says you have to go." Kathy called out from the opposite side of the door.

Jennie smirked at her as she growled again this time in anger.

"See what a wimp Mino is, he sends a kid up to do his dirty work." She giggled.

Lisa kissed her one last time then stood up. "Tell Uncle Mino I'm coming baby."

"Otay." They heard her walk away.

Jennie smirked. "Well, you could be coming, if you came back over here." She purred, running her hand over her belly, enticing her to come back and join her.

Lisa winked at her; "Baby I really got to go, please get dressed..." she leaned down and kissed her belly, "you're too much of a distraction laying there half naked on my bed." she nipped her belly then stood up again and walked over to her dresser; she pulled out a shirt and pulled it over her head.

Jennie sighed but did what she asked. She grabbed her panties and shorts and put them back on. Then she fixed her shirt and walked over to Lisa.

"You won't be home too late, will you?"

"No, the closing should go pretty smoothly; we should be back around nine." Leaning down, she kissed her so softly and tenderly that it made her toes curl.

"Enjoy your night with Rupert and Kathy." Lisa stared into her mossy green eyes, wanting to tell her what She felt in her heart, but instead she kissed her one last time and walked over to the door.

"I'll see you later baby."

"Bye." Jennie said as she opened the door and walked out.

Jennie plopped down on the bed and stretched her arms above her head, her whole body tingly with the aftereffects of her powerful orgasms, and only one thought racing through her mind.

'God, I love that woman!'

***

TBC

Ch 15

It was 8:45 p.m. when the front door was thrown open and Mino and Lisa walked in. Jennie was just coming down the stairs a faraway smile on her face and a white teddy bear in her arms.

"Hey guys." She said smiling.

Lisa looked up and watched her with dark hungry eyes as she walked towards them. A smile spread across her face and her mind pelted her with images of their time spent together earlier that evening.

"Hey"

Mino watched the two of them. He saw the tender looks and felt the heat between them, and he thought he was going to puke.

"God you two are pathetic," he said jealously as he turned and walked into the library, feeling a need for a drink.

Jennie and Lisa smiled at each other as she finally neared her. She stood up on her tippy-toes and wrapped her arms around her neck, pulling herself up she leaned forward, her mouth hovering just over her, "I missed you."

Lisa smiled and hugged her as her mouth took hers, covering her completely and sparking a fierce desire within her.

Nipping her bottom lip Lisa pulled back, her eyes searching the hallway and stairs, "Where're Rupert and Kathy?" she asked a little nervously, afraid of being caught again by her father-in-law.

Jennie smiled, "He's putting her to sleep."

Lisa relaxed and kissed her again then stepped back, "I need a drink."

They walked hand in hand into the library, noticing her white fluffy package she asked, "Why are you carrying around Little Minny?"

She giggled, "Little Minny?"

They entered the library and Jennie sat down on the corner of the desk with Little Minny on her lap, as Lisa walked over to the credenza and poured a drink.

"Yeah, that's what Kathy named him." She said.

"Yeah, because I gave it to her." Mino said, drinking his whiskey.

Lisa walked over to the desk and sat down, finally able to relax, she sighed contently as her eyes wandered to Jennie's bare legs, remembering what they felt like to be wrapped around her.

Jennie looked down at the white teddy a sweet smile on her face. "Kathy gave him to me. She said she wanted me to have him because I liked him and he liked me, and that we should always be together." She smiled at Lisa, "I think it's a bribe."

Lisa chuckled and Mino smiled, "Yeah, she's a smart kid that one."

"So, how'd it goes?" she asked.

Mino smiled, "Great luv, I am now the proud owner of a house."

Lisa lifted her glass to her brother-in-law a smile on her face, "Here's to becoming a homeowner, may your house always be warm!"

Mino smiling from ear to ear raised his glass, "Here, here!"

They drank down their whiskeys and then slammed them down on the tables.

Mino stood up, "Well I'm out of here. You kids be good now." He smirked as he walked out to the hallway and to the front door.

He opened the door and then stopped.

"YOU!"

"Oh, bloody hell!" Mino said right before Riley punched him in the face.

He fell back grabbing his nose, "Fuck! Riley you wanker, what'd you do that for?"

Riley was fuming; he had followed Jennie here after school to see what she was up to. When he saw her pick up the little girl and bring her here, he thought that maybe she was telling the truth and really was babysitting. But then when he saw Mino enter the house without even knocking an hour later, he saw red. A little bit after that he saw another man enter, also without knocking, and his suspicions grew even more.

When they left, he waited to see if Jennie would leave but she hadn't. When they finally returned, he decided that he was going to get to the bottom of this once and for all.

Jennie and Lisa came running out of the library, Jennie seeing Riley ran over to him, "Riley! What the hell are you doing?"

But he ignored her, his attention focused on Mino, "Babysitting my ass! You just couldn't stay away from her, could you? How long has this been going?" He drew his arm back ready to punch him again, but he couldn't his arm was held back by a band of steel, and he turned to see who it was.

"Who the hell are you?"

"I'm Lisa and you are in my home." She said quietly. She tried to remain calm, this was after all her lover's brother, and it wouldn't help if they started off on the wrong foot. Obviously, Riley had some misconceptions as to what was going on and Lisa wanted to make sure that it got cleared up. But Riley made that difficult with his next words.

"Oh, really your house? So, you're the sick perverted bastard that's been sleeping with my sister and taking advantage of a kid!"

As Riley screamed at her, Lisa's face slowly started to get red, 'this

guy really is an asshole.'

Jennie seeing Lisa's ire rising stepped in front of Riley, she tilted her head back so she could yell at him properly. "Riley, shut up! You have no idea what's going on! What the hell are you doing here anyway?"

Riley looked down at her, "I followed you from school to here. And where the hell did you get a BMW? Is that your payment for your services, is that what you've been doing here! God Jennie what the hell is wrong with you! I knew you liked older, but this is ridiculous. What are you, her underage paramour? What are yo..."

He didn't get the last words out, as Jennie slapped him across the face. Riley was shocked and his hand flew to his reddening cheek, his eyes bulged, and he stared at his little sister, "Jennie! What the hell?"

Jennie was so mad at him she knew that if she looked in the mirror smoke would be billowing out of her ears. She stepped closer to him and poked her finger in his chest with every word that she said. "Riley you listen to me! This is Lalisa Manoban, and this is her home, I baby-sit her daughter and we are NOT sleeping together!"

'Well that's true.'

Lisa thought as she watched her little warrior scold her much larger brother. She had been ready to sock Riley in the face herself, but Jennie had beaten her to it, and now she found her control over the situation quite...arousing.

Lisa shifted her stance, as Mino's eyes settled on him. He shook his head, "You're pathetic." He rolled his eyes as Lisa smiled guiltily and shrugged her shoulders.

"What the bloody hell is going on down here, Kathleen is trying to sleep!"

David came downstairs in his bathrobe and slippers, annoyed with all the commotion that was coming from the hallway. Seeing Riley everything clicked in his mind. He looked over and saw William's

nose that was slightly bleeding, Lisa looking a little, well he didn't know what she was thinking, but her eyes were locked on Jennie, and if he had to call it anything he would say it was a look of lust, and Jennie, well David almost smiled, she was right up in her brother's face which was quite a feat considering he was much, much taller then she, but there she was scolding him like a child.

David walked down to greet Riley, "Riley my boy how're you son?" he asked putting his hand out.

Riley dumbly shook his hand, confusion in his eyes, "Mr. David, what are you doing here?'" he looked at all of them, "Just what the hell is going on here?"

David took over, obviously these children were way too hot headed, he pierced Lisa with a, 'I told you so look' then looked to Riley. Gently taking him by the arm he steered him into the library. "Riley my boy, this is Lalisa, my in-law and this is her home."

Riley had the good sense to blush slightly, finally realizing that Jennie had been telling him the truth. He turned to Lisa who had walked in along with Mino and Jennie, she was leaning against the wall and Jennie was leaning against her, Riley frowned. "I'm sorry for barging in, I was concerned about Jennie, when she told me she was babysitting, I..." he was a little embarrassed to admit it, but he did, "didn't believe her. I thought...well let's just say my thoughts weren't pleasant."

Lisa forced a smile to her face and shook her head.

"That's no reason to make me your punching bag." Mino said, feeling his nose, he had forgotten how hard Riley could hit.

Riley smirked at him,

'that had felt good'.

"Sorry, I thought..." stopping himself he remembered who else was in the room, "Well...you know what I thought."

Mino just nodded his head glad that Riley had the sense to keep his mouth shut.

Jennie finally walked over to Riley, "Riley I appreciate your concern really, I do, honestly, it's a little odd, coming from you, but it means a lot. Thank you." She leaned up and kissed him on the cheek making him blush.

"But you are not entirely wrong." At the perplexed look on his face, she continued.

"Riley, Lisa and I, are dating." When she saw him about to protest, she held up her hand, "but we're taking it slow and waiting." Her eyes held his telling him exactly what she was talking about.

He looked over at Lisa, she was a tall woman, an older, much older than his sister and he wasn't sure how he felt about that, he turned back to Jennie. "Dating? Jennie, she's so much older than you. This can't work." He said.

"Riley, we will make it work because we want to be with each other." She looked at everyone in the room a smile on her face, "everyone here as given us their approval, but I would really like to have yours too, you are my brother, and even though we haven't had the best of relationships I still love you and you are the only family I have left." She said it so sadly that Lisa felt a tug on her heart.

Mino took exception to her words, "I beg to differ sweets we are your family."

Jennie looked at him, her eyes misty and her heart so full of love that she thought it would burst, she smiled at him, and he nodded at her. Then she looked at David who sat down next to him. He smiled at her and shook his head. When she looked over at Lisa, the love and acceptance she saw in her eyes was too much, and tears fell freely rolling down her cheek, her heart surely going to explode.

She looked back at Riley. "Please Riley, Lisa is a wonderful and kind and Kathy is just as amazing, please understand, I...need them and they need me."

Looking into her eyes Riley knew that she had finally found what she had always been searching for, what he was never able to give

her, and he felt like a failure. "I'm sorry Jennie, I'm sorry I wasn't able to be the person that you needed me to be. I..."

Jennie shushed him and smiled warmly at him, "Riley you have nothing to be sorry for, when mom and dad died, they left you with a big responsibility and you were young you did the best you could. Besides I wasn't exactly the epitome of civility myself. I'm sorry for everything that I ever put you through."

"It's okay at least it hasn't been boring." He said smiling.

Smiling at each other feeling a natural flow between them of love and understanding, they embraced each other warmly, as the others looked on.

'Great now the wankers always going to be around!

' Mino thought.

'Marvelous, that they were able to come to terms with each other, finally our family is all together.

' David thought.

'When the hell is everyone going to leave!'

Lisa thought her mind only on comforting Jennie and showing her how much she loved and needed her, how much she was a part of a family.

Riley pulled back, "Oh remember that promotion I told you I might be getting?" Riley asked her.

"Yeah."

"Well, I got it!' Riley smiled his excitement at the prospect of his new position showing on his face.

"That's great Riley! Congratulations! You deserve it." Jennie hugged him again and kissed him on the cheek.

"Thank you, tomorrow we start packing for Argentina!" He said to

the four shocked faces.

Lisa, Mino and David all stood up, saying at the same time, "WHAT!"

Jennie was chuckling, "What? Riley what are you talking about? Argentina?"

"My promotion, the base is sending me to the facility in Argentina! Isn't that great Jennie, we get to experience life somewhere outside this country! It's going to be fantastic!"

Jennie's eyes quickly looked over at Lisa, who looked like she was going to kill Riley. "Riley, I'm not going to Argentina," she said flatly, and Lisa shook her head confirming her answer. College was one thing, but another country was totally unacceptable.

Riley frowned, "What are you talking about Jennie? Of course, you're coming with me, I'm still your guardian; I can't leave you here by yourself."

"Bloody hell you're still such a wanker Riley. She's not by herself!' Mino said.

David stepped forward to take control of this situation, Mino was getting rankled, Riley was getting rankled, Jennie looked like her whole world was falling apart, and Lisa had murder in her eyes.

"Riley, let's discuss this more rationally, shall we? You have known me a long time, yes?"

"Yes."

"And in that whole time have you ever known me to cause harm to Jennie?"

"No."

David smiled at him, "Good. Now when do you leave for Argentina?"

"Saturday."

David smiled at him, "Oh, well Riley Jennie's birthday is Friday and then she'll be of a legal age to be on her own and your responsibilities to her will be over. Riley you are a reasonable young man surely you see that there is no reason why Jennie cannot stay. I can assure you that she will be well taken care of."

Lisa suddenly couldn't breathe,

'Friday...her birthday was Friday?'

Her eyes darted to Jennie who looked just as shocked as she felt.

"Friday?" Remembering what date, it was she realized that her birthday was indeed Friday and she had completely forgotten. How could she forget that! It was what she had been dreaming about since Lisa first told her that they had to wait. '

That's because your birthdays always suck Jennie.'

She started to laugh at her own stupidity, and she looked at Lisa, a carnal smile on her face. "Friday, my birthday's Friday."

Lisa smiled back at her, her heart racing with anticipation; Friday couldn't come quick enough.

Riley was still considering what David said. He had forgotten her birthday was Friday and as he looked at Jennie and saw her heart in her eyes as she stared back at Lisa, he knew that David was right, he couldn't deny her something that she obviously wanted.

He looked at Mino and David, "I guess you're right." He said. He gently grabbed her shoulders, "Jennie are you sure this is what you want? Absolutely sure, because Argentina is a long way from here and you can't come running home to me if things don't work out?"

Before Jennie could reply Lisa stepped up to him, "Riley, I give you my word that nothing will happen to her. I care very deeply for your sister, and I plan on keeping her with me for a long time. "

Lisa turned to Jennie feeling a little unsure, "That is of course if that's what you want?"

Jennie threw herself at her, hugging her fiercely; she took her head in her hands and looked deeply into Lisa's eyes, "Of course that's what I want!" Then she kissed her deeply.

Riley watched as they passionately kissed, shifting on his feet and looking way. He was feeling a little uneasy with the heat that seemed to sizzle and crackle in the air around them.

Lisa pulled away smiling at her and looked back at Riley. She held her hand out to him and Riley, smiling back, took it. "I guess that would be okay." He said.

"Excellent!" David said.

"A round of drinks for everyone!" Mino said walking over to the credenza. "Except you pet, you're not old enough yet." He snickered at her, unable to resist teasing her.

Jennie stuck her tongue out at him, and Lisa laughed hugging her closer.

Life was good and it was only going to get better!

Ch 16

Wednesday Night...

Tuesday and Wednesday afternoon flew by for Jennie with Riley leaving for Argentina Saturday night she had a lot to do, and Riley did something that she never ever thought he would. He called Mr. Snyder and told him that there was a family emergency, and that Jennie wouldn't be at school for the rest of the week.

It was a little shocking because he actually did something nice for her for a change but ever since they had their talk, her relationship with Riley had been nothing but the best. They laughed and joked with each other; they talked about their futures and what they wanted to do for the rest of their lives. They even talked about their mom, dad and brothers who they both missed terribly.

She had never stopped to consider the possibility that Riley was also deeply affected by the deaths of their family. She only thought about her own misery. Now she knew and she understood how hard it had been for him to give up on his college life to take care of her. And she felt completely ashamed of the way she'd acted and how much harder she had made it for him.

It had been a very emotional night for her. She had never talked to anyone about her grief, except David, and the fact that she was able to do it with the one person she'd always wanted to, was a completion of sorts for her. For the first time in her life, she knew exactly who she was, where she came from, and what she wanted. It was funny that she had Mino to thank for all of her good fortune and she made a personal vow to one day do the same for him.

Although the week had been both therapeutic and busy, she missed Lisa and Kathy to death. Since their talk at the mansion she hadn't seen either one of them and she felt like a piece of her was missing. Everyone in the room that night, except her, had agreed that she should stay at home with Riley for his last week. Even Lisa,

although begrudgingly, wanted her to spend time with Riley.

When Jennie had adamantly refused to do it because she didn't want to be away from Lisa and Kathy even for one day, Lisa had calmly pulled her outside to the hallway and told her that this was her opportunity to get to know her brother, to put aside any past hurts and pains and to start over with him. Lisa told her that since meeting her she realized that a person was nothing without their family; that family, no matter what, stuck together. Then she had embraced her and whispered to her that they had their whole life together and that even though it would kill her to be away from her for so long Lisa thought it was important that she spend time with Riley. So, she had agreed.

Of course, she spoke to them everyday. Every morning Kathy would call and wake her up and tell her what she did the day before. Then she would whine about how she missed her and wanted her home where she belonged. Jennie always ended up with her eyes misty with tears of love after those conversations.

At nighttime when Jennie lay awake in bed thinking of her, Lisa would call. She would tell her how much she missed her, how she couldn't wait to see her and touch her again, how she looked forward to living with her and coming home every night just to hear the sound of her voice. Those conversations always ended with her heart racing and her body pleasantly numb and covered in sweat from the sweet release that her deep sultry voice so expertly coaxed from her.

As every day went by and Friday drew closer, her excitement kept increasing. She felt, no she knew that she was on the threshold of a new beginning, and she couldn't wait to get it started.

While the week went fast for Jennie, it couldn't have gone any slower for Lisa. No one wanted to talk to her; no one wanted to even be in the same room with her. She was curt, quick to temper and extremely broody. Only Kathy would spend time with her and that was only because she was the fruit of her daddy's loins. Kathy drove everyone nuts with temper tantrums at every turn; she was uncooperative and extremely obstinate. Just that night at dinner she had adamantly refused to eat her peas, which frustrated David so

much that he was ready to pull out his hair.

They were two peas in a pod, father and daughter, and as Lisa laid her down to sleep that night she was reminded about how special and unique Kathy truly was.

"Daddy?" She asked quietly.

"Yes."

"When's Jennie coming back? I miss her."

Lisa smiled, she sounded so sad and dismal and she knew exactly how she felt. Lisa sighed deeply and smoothed her hair away from her face. "She'll be here soon baby, just a couple of more days and then she'll be living here with us, wouldn't you like that?"

"Yes, but why did she have to go away daddy?" Her eyes lowered and she gripped the blanket, "Was it something I did?"

Lisa looked at her questioningly. "Why would you ask that baby?"

She shrugged then whispered, "Mommy left too."

Lisa leaned forward and kissed her forehead, "Sweetie your Mommy was sick that was why she left us. You had nothing to do with it. Jennie hasn't left us; she just had to spend some time with her brother before he moves away."

"Oh, is that who that loud mean man was that hit Uncle Mino?" she asked.

Lisa cringed. "You heard that?"

"Yes, Daddy. He was very loud, and he didn't seem very nice. Are you sure Jennie's okay with him?" Her facial expression was very severe, and she looked like she was ready to go out and save Jennie from some demon that threatened her.

Lisa smiled at her; she looked like a sweet little avenging angel. "Of course, she is sweetie. He's her brother, and brothers don't hurt their sisters."

'Except Mino' Lisa chuckled to herself remembering the day of Elizabeth's funeral and the way Mino had slapped Carla across the face.

"Where is he going?" she asked curiously.

"Well Riley's in the army and he's being transferred to Argentina."

"Ar...den...tina?"

She smiled, "Argentina sweetie, it's in South America."

Her eyes crinkled in confusion, "That sounds very far away daddy."

Lisa nodded, "It is."

"And Jennie is staying here with us?" she asked hopefully.

"Yes, she is."

Kathy smiled brightly shaking her head up and down. "Good, because she belongs here with us daddy you have to make sure that she always stays, because I love her."

Lisa chuckled and answered honestly, "So do I baby, very much."

Lisa realized as Kathy looked up at her that she hadn't mentioned that to her before, yet she didn't look surprised or shocked. She didn't look upset, and she certainly did not look like that was something she didn't want to hear. She looked...inquisitive, and Lisa suddenly felt like she was in the interrogators chair.

"You do?" her eyes were glued to her like she was waiting for something.

Lisa looked right back at her, "Yes I do."

Lisa actually fidgeted slightly as Kathy continued to stare at her with that inquiring gaze.

"Have you told her that you love her daddy?"

Lisa looked away feeling a little embarrassed. This was a strange

conversation to be having with her four-year-old daughter. How could she understand that there were many different forms of love? She was so young and the only love that she knew about was the love that she felt for her family. There was no way she could fathom that the love Lisa felt for Jennie was deeper than all of that, that it was soul binding. How could she possibly understand the deathly fear she had in her heart about revealing her true feelings to Jennie.

"Well...um...no, no I haven't."

Kathy's eyes bulged and then they crossed angrily, "Daddy, you should tell her. I always tell her that I love her, and she says it back to me. If you told her then she would say it back to you and then she would stay with us forever."

Lisa smiled at how sure she was of that and at how mature and understanding she sounded. "You think so ah?"

Kathy shook her head, "You should always tell someone that you love them daddy, it makes them feel good." She threw her hands up in the air appearing completely exasperated with her daddy. "Plus, how will she ever know unless you tell her!"

Lisa was taken aback by her astuteness; she made everything sound so easy and simple, if only it was. "Yes, it does you're right."

"So, you'll tell her?" Kathy asked, waiting for Lisa to answer her positively and she looked like she was ready to rip her head off if she answered in any other way than what she thought.

"Yes, baby I'll tell her."

Lisa looked at her seriously, "Kathy how did you," then she started to tickle her sides and Kathy giggled trying to get away "...a little four-year-old imp, become so smart about love?"

"Stop daddy!" she giggled, and Lisa did, sitting back and laughing as she laughed wiping away the tears that fell from her eyes.

"I'm very mature for my age daddy," she said quite seriously.

Lisa just looked at her one brow raised in disbelieve with the things that came out of her daughter's mouth, '

this

must be Jennie's influence.'

"Are you now na?" she said as she slipped into her Thai accent, feeling at ease and comfortable playing and talking with her daughter. "And who told ya that?"

"Jennie."

"Ah of course who else would say that but another person that was older beyond her years."

Kathy smiled, "She said you would say that."

Lisa smirked at her, and she smirked right back. Then Lisa smirk disappeared, and her face turned serious once again. "Kathy, I want to explain to you about my relationship with Jennie." Lisa hesitantly started; she had to tell her sometime.

"You mean that you two love each other the way a mommy and daddy are supposed to love each other and not the way that Uncle Mino loves her?"

'eh?'

"How do you know about the different kinds of love baby?"

"Well Grandpa David said that when two people love each other the way a mommy and daddy do that it was different from a love that friends have. He said that when two people find each other and all the pieces fit together like a puzzle then that's a forever love, a soul mate love." Her eyes crinkled like she wasn't sure she totally understood that, but she was willing to go along with it. "Like him and Grandma Elizabeth and you and Jennie."

Lisa was shocked to hear her say that. She had no idea that David had talked to Kathy about this, but she was so grateful that she had,

because honestly, she had no idea how she would have explained it. "He did, did he? Well, he's right and that's how I love Jennie. Does that bother you?"

"No, I want you to be happy daddy, and I know that Jennie makes you happy and she makes me happy, and I know that we make her happy...we're a family daddy."

Lisa felt such relief at hearing her words that a big smile crossed her face. "Yes, we are a family baby you're right. Now it's late and you have to go to bed."

She leaned down and kissed her on the forehead then stood up and walked over to the door. She looked back at her, her perfect little girl, and sent a silent prayer to god for her. "I love you Kathy."

"I love you too daddy."

Now as Lisa stood in the basement pummeling the bag her mind moved on to thoughts of Jennie, but that was nothing new. Her mind was always on Jennie and the worst part was at night when she was alone in bed. Her dreams were a mix of hot urgent sex, sweet slow sex, and just about any kind of sex that her deprived mind could think of, which resulted calling her every night and tell her how much she missed her. How much she wanted to touch her and please her. Lisa even coaxed her into a little phone sex, which although wasn't perfect, the sultry tone of her voice filled the void...a little.

Nevertheless, Lisa was still a loose cannon and the knowledge that Friday, and what that day represented, was so close only made her more frustrated and tighter. It didn't matter how many times she jacked off in the shower or with her on the phone, she was as horny for her now as she was the first moment that she saw her standing in her hallway.

Not seeing Jennie only served to heighten her desire and lust. Lisa had become accustomed to seeing her every day, talking to her, touching her soft silky skin. Her lips had become addicted to the taste and feel of her, and not being able to do those things sent her body into sexual overload.

Truthfully, Lisa was a little concerned for her wellbeing, because she knew that when Friday came, she wasn't going to be able to hold back. She knew that the first time was going to be quick and rough. Lisa smirked thinking of all the fun she'll have making it up to her.

So, while Lisa was frustrated and ready to snap at the slightest provocation, she just kept repeating to herself, that Friday was only a day away. That was her saving grace because she knew that it would be over soon. Lisa grinned. She had so many plans for them, for her and her birthday, and she knew that soon she would be able loose herself in the hot solace that her body and soul would provide.

***

TBC

Ch 17

Jennie opened the door to her closet and pulled out a dress. She was going out to celebrate her birthday tomorrow night with Rosé and Alex and she was contemplating what to wear. It was a sheer black chiffon dress that in her opinion was very modest for a night out with her best friends to celebrate her birthday. It was knee length and had spaghetti straps with a plunging neckline and an empire seam. It was one of her favourites.

She had mixed feelings about going out and she wasn't exactly sure she wanted to go. But Rosé and Alex had insisted saying that since they would all be graduating soon and moving on, that they didn't know when the next time they all would be together.

It was a good point plus Rosé had specifically planned it for Thursday so she couldn't say no. Rosé said that she knew she probably had plans with Lisa Friday night, and then of course Riley was leaving Saturday, so tonight had to be their night. She did look forward to hanging out with her friends because she really hadn't lately except for that Sunday in the pool and she did miss them. But she had a strange feeling about tonight it was in the way Alex looked at her, the way his 'I know something you don't know' face grinned at her, that told her he had something up his sleeve.

She shrugged off her paranoia it didn't matter what he planned, she was so happy and excited about everything that nothing else mattered. Plus, she also figured that it was the perfect opportunity to get Lisa used to the idea of hanging out with her friends, something that she knew still made her uneasy.

RING RING RING

Sitting on the bed she reached for the phone, "Hello."

"Hey baby."

She smiled her nightly call from her lover was something that she always looked forward to, "Hey to you too."

"How are you?" Lisa asked.

"Mmmm, tired, you?"

"Lonely." Lisa deep voice penetrated her senses and kicked her hormones up a notch. She smiled as she felt the now familiar tingles of desire slowly start to seep through her weary body.

"Oh? What's a matter Kathy not keeping you company?" she teased her.

"I'm lonely for you lover."

Her voice dipped down another notch and Jennie's body immediately reacted to it, she felt her nipples tighten with lust and she moved up on the bed leaning back against the pillows. She closed her eyes and concentrated on her. She purred into the phone, "Mmmm, I know...me too. I can't wait to see you Lisa, I miss you so much."

Lisa leaned back in her chair and closed her eyes imagining that she was here. "One more day and one more night, and then we can...console each other."

She huskily laughed, "I like the sound of that."

Looking at her dress and remembering why she had it out she took a deep breath and asked. "Umm...Lisa, do you have plans tomorrow night?"

"Why?"

"Well Rosé and Alex are taking me out for my birthday to the Club B and I thought that maybe you could meet us there?"

Her eyes immediately snapped open, and she gulped, '

hang out with her friends! Why would I want to hang out with her friends? So, I can really feel like an old lecher?'

"Ah...Jennie I don't know if I feel comfortable with that, I mean Rosé's great, but I don't think Alex likes me very much," she grumbled into the phone, thinking about how much she didn't like Alex.

Jennie giggled, "you mean because you don't like Alex."

Lisa smirked, "Am I that transparent?"

"Only to me lover." Just as she expected, she was uncomfortable hanging out with her friends because they were younger and that only reminded of her age, which ultimately made her uncomfortable. Inwardly Jennie sighed, she thought they had gotten past this ridiculous notion of the age gap. '

Silly girl. Doesn't she know by now that I always get what I want?'

"Are you sure? I'll let you get me drunk and take advantage of me."

Lisa chuckled then froze as she imagined what would happen. Jennie would be decked out in some sexy come hit her outfit, drinking which meant less inhibitions, and all the ogling perverts that would be staring at her woman and trying to get a piece of her.

Jennie was silent on the other end as Lisa pondered her jealous thoughts, she waited patiently for the answer she knew she would hear.

"What time?" Lisa asked begrudgingly.

She smiled, "Ten o'clock?"

"Okay I'll be there."

"Don't sound so thrilled Lisa, you might give me a heart attack."

Lisa chuckled softly.

Jennie whispered, "I can't wait to see you? Will you dance with me?"

"Ah...I'm not that good of a dancer Jennie," Lisa said shyly.

"Well, if it's a slow song will you dance with me?" she asked again.

'Slow song...her ripe body pressed up against mine, her scent in my nose, her hands on my body, my hands roaming down her body.'

"Yes."

"Good." She peeked at the clock. "Oh god it's so late." She closed her eyes yawning as the weary events of the day once again took hold of her body. "I've done nothing but clean and pack for the past two days, I really need a break and tomorrow will be perfect."

Lisa wasn't too sure about that, but she agreed with her anyway. "Yeah." Seeing that it was one in the morning she reluctantly said, "You go to sleep baby, and I'll see you tomorrow."

"Okay...I'll see you tomorrow then."

"Bye"

"Bye"

Jennie immediately got under the covers and went to sleep her dreams filled with beautiful dances under moonlight skies and a strong pair of arms holding her close.

But Lisa couldn't sleep and once again found herself downstairs in the basement beating the hell out of her poor punching bag.

She was arguing with herself about the logic and saneness of going to the Club B tomorrow. While she ached to see her, Lisa was also hit with a wave of insecurity and fear, there were so many what if going through her head that she felt like it was going to explode.

What if after being away from her for a couple of days Jennie realized that her feelings were not that deep?

What if after hanging out with her friends, people that were her own age, Jennie decided that she was too old for her and that they had nothing in common?

What if while hanging out at the Club B she met someone else and realized that she didn't care for her as much as she thought, and instead saw her only as forbidden fruit that she was not supposed to have, hence the obsession with her.

What if after realizing all these things, Jennie changed her mind and didn't want to be with her.

There was a lot of what ifs, and she was able to acknowledge to herself that she was afraid that each and every one of them would come true.

It all went back to the fact that they had not once told each other that they loved one another and because of that this fear was rotting away in her mind and in her belief , it was coaxing her into believing in it and telling her that Jennie was just using her.

Lisa knew deep in her heart that these uncertainties were unfounded and just her own insecurities about their relationship and that's why she agreed to meet her there. She was a firm believer that to put faith and believe in your fears was foolish and if she allowed herself to do that then she would definitely lose her.

So, Lisa sucked it up and agreed to go, she wasn't going to let her emotions get in the way getting what she wanted. Unless those emotions were the ones that screamed to fuck her. Those, she snickered to herself, she would let run wild.

***

The music was blaringly loud, and the club was dark. A figure stood in the darkened shadows; her face a mask of hatred and jealously as her eyes blackened with righteous anger stared at the young boy that was slowly but surely inching his chair closer to her woman.

It was eleven o'clock and Lisa arrived at The Club B about half an hour ago with every intention of relaxing and enjoying herself. She had stood in the doorway looking for Jennie when she spotted her sitting at a table with a nice-looking young boy.

Immediately her body tensed, her eyes darkened and all thoughts of

trying to enjoy herself flew out the window. The fear took over and every single argument that she'd had with herself last night repeated itself in her head.

Lisa felt the need to protect her heart and the best way to do that was to lurk and stalk. So, she sank back into the shadows of the club and slowly made her way to the darkened corner behind them, where she could blend in and listen to their conversation, and maybe find out her true feelings before it was too late.

'It's already too late you idiot, you love her!'

Jennie checked her watch for the tenth time as a shiver ran down her spine. She had the distinct impression that she was being watched but when she looked around the darkened club, she saw no one, so she assumed that it was just the wandering eyes of Matt who sat across from her talking her head off.

She checked her watch again; it was eleven o'clock and there was still no sign of Lisa. She sighed again, anger starting to seep into her, anger that she was standing her up because of some stupid idea she had in her head and really angry that Alex had set her up on a blind date with this guy Matt. She had been so mad when he introduced him as her date, but she never got a chance to yell at him because he quickly disappeared with a floundering Rosé behind him.

Jennie should have expected this, and she had but she had been so consumed with her own inner peace and happiness that the part of her brain that normally detected deception was nowhere to be found. She knew Alex didn't like Lisa. He had in fact just the other day tried to talk her out of it, telling her that she was too old for her and that she was wasting her life and time on who was too old and came equipped with instant family.

She saw red and punched him hard in the stomach, and when he bent over clutching his stomach and looking at her in shock, she yelled at him. She told him that she didn't care what he thought that she loved Lisa and Kathy, that they were her family, and that if he couldn't handle that then she didn't want to be his friend anymore. She should have known that his quick agreement was

false.

So, she had been forced to sit here and hang out with Matt. He was a nice guy, but she wasn't interested and the more he talked the closer he inched his chair to her. Her eyes hardened. She was miserable and pissed off, and all she wanted to do was leave. When his hand came up and rested on top of hers, she decided it was time to go, not even noticing the dark shadow that stood behind her growling softly.

Lisa stepped closer to rip the offending hand off her, but she stopped when she heard her voice. It was not the hot seductive sound her fear was expecting to hear instead it was hard and it was cold, and it was clearly disinterested with the person she was talking to.

"Matt...look I'm really sorry, I don't know why Alex set us up on this date...I'm involved with someone that I care very deeply about and in fact I'll be moving in with her so I really don't see the point in us continuing with this charade."

Jennie checked her watched again and grumbled, "In fact she was supposed to meet me here tonight and she so in trouble for not being here."

The rage receded at hearing her words and Lisa quickly blended back into the shadows a stupid grin on her face...'I'm in trouble' feeling a rise in her pants she adjusted her now hardening cock as images of Jennie punishing set her body on fire and put out the flickers of fear that she had allowed to overcome her.

Matt's hand slid off of hers, "Oh...Alex didn't mention that."

Lisa grinned as she watched the boy pull away, '

that's right boy...stop touching what's mine!'

"That's because Alex doesn't like her and doesn't mind his own business. I'm really sorry I hope I didn't lead you on in any way."

Quickly Lisa turned around and headed out the door to the alley where she parked. Jumping in, she started the engine and sped out

heading home. Excitement coursed through her body and her hard on grew painfully...she felt such relief at hearing her say those words that it made her feel wicked and naughty, and she couldn't wait to...express herself.

"No, it's okay Jennie, I understand. I enjoyed talking to you," Matt said as he smiled at her shyly.

Jennie stood up already dismissing him, "Yeah me too. It was nice meeting you, but I have to go."

"Sure...okay, I'll...ah see you around."

She smiled at him tightly and quickly headed out the door. Once she reached outside, she practically ran to the car.

'She better have a damn good explanation for standing me up!'

***

The Mansion

She opened the door and shut it, quickly making her way up the stairs and to Lisa's bedroom. She was going to give her a piece of her mind! She still couldn't believe that she stood her up, some first date this was.

Jennie just turned the corner when she was grabbed and pulled into the shadows and thrown up against the wall. A strong body pinned her to the wall as Lisa grinned down at her hungrily.

Jennie squashed down the instant desire she felt from her body next to hers and the heat she read in her eyes, and instead she stared up at Lisa accusingly. "Where were you?"

Lisa grinned at her, her eyes hot with possession and lust, she felt so much joy and peace that she didn't care how pissed off she was, and she didn't care about what she was about to do, because she was about to do it...the need to express her love and devotion to her stronger than any sense of morality she currently had. She knew that her reaction to hearing her turn that boy down was a little silly, but for Lisa it was like an aphrodisiac and her lust

immediately took control. Lisa was going to have her; she was going to take what was her...to hell with her birthday!

Her left hand latched on to a breast roughly squeezing it as she leaned down and kissed her collarbone, as her other hand gripping her hip.

Jennie shivered uncontrollably as she pressed herself further into Lisa hardness, her eyes closed, "Lisa what are you doing?" she asked breathlessly.

"I'm taking what's mine." She said as her lips trailed up her neck and to her ear where she lightly nipped on her earlobe before thrusting her tongue inside, making her moan.

"Lisa, what's going on?" Jennie asked, she knew something had to have happened to make her so...aggressive. Then she thought back to that feeling of being watched at the Club, and as she nipped her neck and suckled her skin, her eyes popped open with the knowledge that she hadn't been going crazy.

"You were there." It wasn't a question, because she knew she was.

"I was there." Lisa said licking the sensitive skin behind her ear.

"Why didn't you tell me?" Jennie asked curiously her head tilting to the side to give her better access. Lisa grunted her approval, and she lifted her leg, placing it on her waist, slowly massaging her thigh.

"I saw you there sitting with that boy." Lisa growled out the thought once again rankling her possessive nature, which induced her desire, which in turn made her actions more brutal.

Roughly her fingers moved up her leg, her nails lightly scraping her skin, reaching her panties Lisa skimmed the lace edge then pressed down rubbing her satin covered wet slit up and down, applying more pressure with every stroke she made.

"ohhhh...!" Jennie moaned as her head fell back against the wall and her body obeyed Lisa every stroke and command. She would do anything she asked, she only hoped that she would.

"I wanted to kill him for talking to you, for touching you."

Lisa pushed her panties to the side and stroked her moistened lips as her mouth continued to suck and nip on her neck. Her other hand squeezed her breast and pulled on her nipple, rotating it between her fingers, eliciting another guttural moan from Jennie.

"Lisa..."

Tired of the barrier that stood between her prize, Lisa grabbed her panties and yanked them off, having the presence of mind to stuff them in her pocket so she could save them.

"I realized that I was afraid, afraid that maybe you would like hanging out with him, that maybe you would change your mind and not want to be with me anymore. I had convinced myself that I was an obsession to you and nothing more."

Jennie heard the sound of a zipper and then she felt the hot mushroom head slowly rubbed it along her wet cleft. Her breath hitched and her hands gripped her shoulders, her nails digging into Lisa's skin. Her body was on fire, but her mind listened intently to every word she was saying, as her soul and heart soared into the clouds of love passion and understanding that threatened to burst.

"When he touched your hand, I stepped closer ready to wipe him away, then I heard you..."

The head of her cock pressed against her opening and slowly pushed forward.

"Oh God..." Jennie whined, her head whipping to the left. Lisa was so big, and she stretched her tight walls so much that it was slightly painful, and her nails brutally dug further into her shoulder.

Lisa ignored the slight sting of her nails in her flesh and continued, "I heard you tell him that you were involved with someone, that you weren't interested in him. And I felt ...relief, and I felt stupid and foolish for ever thinking what I was thinking, for not believing in you and what you felt."

Lisa pushed forward, and she was halfway inside of her stretching

her tight sheath. She was so hot, so tight.

"Yes Lisa...believe in me, always believe in me..." Jennie whined as Lisa slowly started to rock back into her, needing her to be fully embedded inside.

The clock in the hallway struck twelve and the first chime rang.

Lisa took her head in her hands turning Jennie to face her, her eyes were dark and intense drilling into hers, "I'll always believe in you baby."

Lisa pushed forward until she was all the way inside of her hitting her womb as Lisa's mouth brutally closed over hers covering her moan, as the clock continued to chime in the hallway.

Lisa moved quickly; her body hungry for the release that she had been seeking for so long. Jennie held on tightly her other leg coming up and wrapping around Lisa's waist as she continued to plunge inside of her wet channel.

The clock chimed again.

No words were spoken between them...only the sound of flesh slapping against flesh was heard as Lisa continued to thrust inside of her, continued to claim her.

The faster she moved, the hungrier their mouths claimed one another, and still the clock chimed.

Lisa's body hummed with every frenzied motion she made, and her mind screamed to slow it down or she was going to cum, but she couldn't stop. Lisa was beyond slowing down at this point. She had waited too long, had been craving it too much and she knew that she couldn't hold out any longer.

"Sorry...can't...hold...on," Lisa said just as she slammed into her one last time coming inside of her as stars shined behind her eyes. Lisa finally felt the deep connection she had been seeking from her.

As the clock's chime struck one last time, Jennie's legs ruthlessly squeezed her waist at the same time that her body tightened, and

her inner muscles contracted squeezing her cock and coating her with hot creamy release.

Lisa shook her head in wonderment trying to clear the orgasmic fog, Lisa couldn't believe she had come so fast and so hard, and that it had been the most fulfilling sex she had ever had...so far. She never dreamed that she would feel so complete and so much a part of someone else. Her mind, body and soul sang with the satisfaction.

Slowly Lisa pulled back from her, her eyes adoringly staring at Jennie as her hand wiped away at the tiny droplets of sweat that now resided on her forehead. Leaning forward she licked them up wanting to taste everything that her body created.

Lisa smiled at her as she opened her eyes and smiled back, her eyes flitted to the clock on the wall and she looked back at her smiling sheepishly, "Happy birthday."

She looked over at the clock, it was 12:01AM Friday, it was her birthday...she was finally eighteen.

Jennie grabbed her head, "Perfect timing," then kissed her hard; pulling away she looked at Lisa with awe. "God Lisa that was incredible!"

Lisa grinned at her and shook her head no. "That...that was nothing baby...we have only just begun."

Slowly Lisa leaned down and took her bottom lip in her teeth suckling on it gently, her cock twitched telling her that she was ready to go again. Lisa should have been surprised, but she already knew that she would never be able to get enough of her.

Jennie chuckled when she felt her semi-soft cock growing inside ... again, "Again lover?" she purred as she squeezed her inner muscles and held on to Lisa growing cock.

"Always," Lisa said groaning as her hands once again found their way to her breasts. Lisa tweaked her nipples as she slowly started to rotate her hips against her pelvic bone.

Her entire body was just one big pulsing throb, and Jennie grabbed her head, "fuck me again lover." She demanded.

Lisa growled at her harsh words and was ready to push forward once again when...

"Lalisa, is that you?"

David was just about to fall asleep when he heard voices in the hallway. Knowing how impatient the two of them were he immediately got out of bed. Not that it really mattered, as he checked his watch. It was after midnight and Jennie was officially eighteen, but he still had to play with them a little.

All things considered; he wasn't' surprised at what he saw when he arrived in the hallway. He wasn't so old as to not notice what was indeed going on. He could easily see two shapely legs wrapped around Lalisa' naked waist. He frowned outside, but inside he was grinning from ear to ear, 'ah to be young and impetuous.'

"Jennie, Lalisa, I hope that you are not doing what I am pretty sure you are doing. You do realize that it's midnight."

Lisa and Jennie giggled at each other not caring in the least that David just walked in on them. Lisa pulled out of her and set her down quickly she pulled her pants up and closed them. When Jennie's legs hit the floor, they were slightly wobbly, and she gripped her hips to steady her as she smoothed down her dress. They turned to David both of them feeling giddy and silly.

"Hey David." Jennie said as Lisa wrapped her arms around her waist pulling her back against. Lisa almost groaned when she snuggled her tight little ass into her throbbing cock.

David smiled at them, "Lalisa, I think it's time you two went to sleep, don't you?" He looked at them pointedly.

They both turned with big stupid smiles on their faces ready to oblige him and get some...sleep? But they were stopped by his next words...

" Alone."

Jennie turned around ready to protest. What was the big deal? She was eighteen and there was no reason they couldn't sleep together.

'Not like we're gonna be sleeping anyway'

she giggled inside.

"David..." Jennie started to complain.

But Lisa squeezed her to silently shut her up. "You're right David. It is late and we're sorry we woke you. We're going to bed."

"Good. Good night then." He turned around then stopped, "Oh and Jennie?"

"Yes?"

"Happy birthday." David smiled at her and walked away and down the hallway. When they heard the door open and then close, Jennie turned around in Lisa's arms, her eyes scolding her.

"Lisa, why did you agree to that?" Jennie wrapped her arms around her neck. "We can finally spend the night together! Isn't that what we've been waiting for?" She couldn't understand it, their time was finally here, and she was telling her to go to sleep...by herself!

Lisa just smirked at her then kissed her on the nose as her hands squeezed her ass. "I have a lot of plans for us tomorrow. Trust me; you are going to need your rest."

Lisa wiggled his eyebrows at her, and she giggled. Her mind already bombarding her with all the luscious images of what those plans would be. Her mouth watered in anticipation. She knew that the wait would be well worth it, and it was only one more night.

Lisa pulled her off and turned her toward her room; she smacked her on the ass then gently pushed her toward her door. "Sleep tight lover."

Jennie brazenly looked over her shoulder as she swung her hips back and forth walking toward her door. Reaching it she opened it then stopped and blew Lisa a kiss. She stepped inside and as Lisa

stared at her, she couldn't help but feel the need to torture her just a little for making this decision, so she reached back and unzipped her dress and let it fall carelessly to the floor.

Lisa growled hungrily at her temptress as she stood there with her breasts bare and wearing nothing but a black thong, black stockings and high heels.

"Pleasant dreams lover" Jennie purred softly closing the door in the face of her lusty expression.

'Um, let her think about that.'

Lisa sneered at the closed door, "Vixen."

Ch 18

Soft, silky petals caressed her stomach lightly, then trailed up her chest and circled her breast, she moaned softly, turning her head into her pillow. Slowly, it moved up her neck and raked down her cheek to her lips where it brushed back and forth.

Jennie's eyes opened to see Lisa's beautiful handsome face grinning down at her. Her hand lifted to Lisa, which held a blood red rose over her lips. Jennie turned Lisa hand around and kissed her knuckles lightly nipping at them. "Morning."

"Good morning beautiful."

Jennie smiled shyly, her hand automatically going up to her hair, "Ah you're sweet but a terrible liar. I'm sure I look anything but beautiful."

Lisa eyes sparkled with love. "You're always beautiful to me," she said softly and reverently. Jennie couldn't help the purr that escaped her lips as Lisa leaned down and kissed her softly. She wound her hands up around Lisa neck to draw her closer, but she pushed back, and Jennie scowled at her.

Reaching to the other side of the bed, Lisa picked up a tray and placed it in front of her. She sat up and looked at it, "Lisa, I'm not much of an eater in the morning, unless..." she leaned forward raking her hands up her chest, "I get to eat you."

Lisa groaned at her and smirked, "Baby you need to eat something, you need your energy."

She smirked back, "I do, do I?'

Lisa nodded and placed the rose in the vase that was on the tray then handed her coffee. "Yes, you do."

Jennie took the cup and sipped it, then took the bowl of fruit. She held it in her hands as Lisa picked up a strawberry and held it out to her lips. "You see baby, I have plans for us today, and all of them involve...vigorous activities, that will require you to have a lot of stamina. So, you see you need to start the day off with a nutritious meal."

Her mouth sensually closed over the strawberry, and she let her tongue lick Lisa's fingers as she encased the whole thing in her mouth. She closed her eyes as the exquisite taste hit her taste buds. When Jennie opened them, Lisa was watching her intently. "Nutritious meal ah? Are you going to feed me this nourishing meal?"

Lisa picked up a grape and held it out for her, "If that's what I have to do to make sure you eat, then yes." She popped the grape in her mouth, and Jennie chewed happily.

"Are you always going to feed me breakfast in bed?" she asked sipping her coffee.

Lisa smirked at her, "Only when I want to keep you to myself all day." She looked up at the ceiling, "Which come to think of it, may just be everyday..." she looked back at her smirking playfully, "So I guess the answer is yes." She plopped another grape into her mouth.

Jennie chuckled chewing on her grape. "So, I'm your prisoner now?"

"Prisoner is such a strong word, let's say...love slave." Lisa smirked, and she giggled.

"Well, I guess I can go along with that." Noticing for the first time how quiet it was she asked, "What time is it?"

"It's nine o'clock." Lisa said, picking up another strawberry and presenting it to her.

She quickly took it in her mouth and chewed, "Where're David and Kathy?"

Lisa smiled at her sneakily, "Well, David wanted to visit Jeffrey in LA today, so I asked him to take Kathy with him." She was grinning

from ear to ear now, like a girl that just found her first new shiny red bicycle under the Christmas tree on Christmas morning.

"Oh, so we're alone?" Jennie asked, allowing her to pop another grape into her mouth.

"Utterly and completely alone."

"That's kind of a novelty for us, ah?" she asked drinking her coffee.

Lisa smiled at her and said, "Well, I have every intention of changing that."

Leaning down, Lisa removed a napkin that was lying over a bowl, then she picked up a strawberry and dipped it into the now exposed whipped cream. Raising the fruit to her lips, she whispered, "Open your mouth."

Jennie watched with heavy eyes as she licked her lips. She didn't need to guess what game Lisa was playing; it was seduction pure and simple. A seduction meant to drive her wild and to tame her at the same time, to control her, and she was ready to play.

Slowly, Jennie opened her mouth and Lisa watched excitedly as she stuck her tongue out and licked some of the cream off the strawberry. Then she wrapped her lips around Lisa fingers, pulling them into her mouth. She closed her lips around them as she sucked the strawberry off her fingers.

Lisa knew she had to slow her down because she was too sexy. This was her game, not Jennie ... at least not yet. She pulled her fingers out of her mouth and shook them at her gently.

Jennie looked at her innocently, "What?"

"You are not allowed to seduce the seducer," Lisa said playfully but sternly.

Her eyes sparkled with mischief as her body tingled with anticipation. "Is that what I was doing?"

Lisa stood up and took the tray with her but leaving the bowls of

cream and strawberries on the table. Jennie's eyes followed her tight ass as she walked over to the other table and put the tray down, Lisa had on only a loose pair of black sweats, and she could easily imagine the lack of undergarments she had on underneath.

Lisa walked back over to the bed, a sheer black scarf in each hand. Jennie breath hitched, and the tingling sensation grew to a steady pulse that spiraled throughout her entire being as she moved her hands and stretched the scarves.

"You know exactly what you were doing, and there will be none of that." She pulled the scarves taut making them snap together and Jennie jumped, '

okay Lisa

is control.'

Lisa smirked evilly at her seeing her compliant facial expression. She walked over to the bed and gently took her left arm and drew it up to the bedpost, tying the scarf securely around it. She smiled at her as she watched with heat and hesitation in her eyes. Lisa then walked around and over to the other side of the bed and did the same thing with her right arm.

Walking to the base of the bed Lisa looked up at her handy work, "Mmm...it's almost perfect."

Without another word Lisa leaned down and reaching up grabbed her tank top and ripped it off, then reached for her panties and ripped those off. She threw the tank top on the floor, but she held on to the panties, lifting them to her nose, she closed her eyes and breathed in her musky scent.

Jennie was like a zombie as she did nothing but pant and watch, waiting impatiently for the next move, and the next, and wondered how long she would have to wait for it. Lisa was acting so different, so domineering and it was confusing her a little bit, but she was willing to go along with it because she knew it would be worth it.

Lisa watched the conflicting emotions play across her face and she

rejoiced in it. Last night while Lisa lay in bed wide awake, every single moment that she had teased and tormented her played over in her mind. Every single word that she had spoken to incite her desire ran like a broken record in her ears, and every single plan she had of gifting her with a day of leisurely pleasure now came second to the obsession to torment her as she had tormented her. The unhurried loving could come after, and it most definitely would, but first Lisa had to feed her need.

"God baby, your scent is perfection your hot little cunt reeks of passion and lust...mmmmm...delicious." She shoved them into her pockets, "I'll just keep these along with the other ones."

'

The other ones? She kept those too? Thank God I thought I left them in the hallway for anyone to find.'

Lisa stood there watching her body leisurely exploring all that had before been forbidden, yes she had seen her naked before but never fully, and never tied to the bed awaiting her every kinky whim and desire. She breathed in deep knowing that she had to control her inner desire to just jump on her and take her. She wanted her begging. she wanted her so hot and wet that she couldn't even remember her own name, only that she belonged to her.

Lisa slowly walked over to the side of the bed and picked up a strawberry that she dipped in the cream. She lifted it to her mouth and licked the cream; her eyes pinned on hers as she watched him.

"Are you afraid?" she asked lightly.

"Should I be?" Jennie asked breathlessly.

Lisa smirked, "Well a smart woman, and I do believe you are one, would, I think, have enough sense to be afraid."

She smirked back, "I'm not afraid of you Lisa. I know you won't hurt me."

"Well that's good, because I would never hurt you baby. "

Lisa looked at her shrewdly and keenly, and Jennie wandered if she was someone else, and she second-guessed her answer, maybe she should be afraid. This side of Lisa was a little...foreboding and Jennie shivered with the thought of the unknown.

"But you don't really know me do you? You know the Lisa that let you tease and torment her with your incessant flirting and innuendoes. You know the Lisa that just sat by while you pranced in front of her with your little short skirts and skimpy bathing suits, flaunting what I couldn't have. You know the Lisa that controlled everything that she was feeling for you because of her morals about your age."

Sitting on the bed Lisa took the strawberry and lightly touched Jennie neck then moved it lower trailing a path of whipped cream down her chest, then she swirled it up and around her left breast, then up and around her right breast, Lisa sat back and looked at her art work and then on closer inspection she dipped the strawberry once again in the cream then then touched the strawberry to each nipple leaving a small dollop of cream on each hardened nipple.

Jennie stayed stone still every muscle in her body tense with yearning and something akin to fear, because she knows understood her game and she had a sinking suspicious that she was in for a rather long and drawn-out climax.

"What you don't know is how much control that it took for me to walk away from you every single time. How hard it was for me to not just throw you on the ground and fuck you hard."

Her eyes darkened with lust at Lisa carnal words, and she licked her lips, as her nipples tingled with excitement and the feeling of the cool whipped cream on them.

"But now... now, I don't have to hold back. I don't have to control it anymore, and that, baby, is what you should be afraid of, because I'm going to do things to your body that you never ever experienced before. All your past lovers will become a distant memory from long ago and all you will know is my hands, my mouth, my cock possessing you, taking you."

Lisa stood up and slowly took off her sweatpants as Jennie's eyes followed every move. When she was fully naked standing by the edge of the bed, her enormous rock-hard cock staring at her in the face, she swallowed and suddenly found herself very, very hungry.

Lisa moved and lowered herself on the bed hovering just above her but not touching her. She looked down at her nipples and the cream that was slowly starting to melt from the heat of her body and was running down the sides of her breasts.

Lisa leaned down and licked the cream off of one nipple and then turned her head and cleaned the other one. Then she looked up at her.

Her eyes were moss green slits as she watched Lisa, her mouth was slightly opened, and she was staring at her longingly.

Lisa smiled at her then went back to her nipples. She lavished each one with rough suckling and hard tapping of her tongue. She moved to the side of her breast and licked all the cream up, then quickly latched on again biting down hard and making Jennie jump.

"Ohhhh"

Lisa moved lower to her belly where she licked every delectable inch of skin, nipping here and there and then cooling it with her wet tongue. She continued to move lower until her face was eye level with her most treasured spot. Placing both hands on her thighs Lisa spread her legs wide then licked and nibbled the inside of each thigh.

Jennie moaned as every inch of her body, now familiar with her skillful ministrations, begged for more. "Lisa..."

Lisa sat back and reached up to the table bringing the bowl of strawberries down onto the bed. She picked one up and held it before her as she kneeled in between her legs. Twirling it around her fingers she contemplated her.

"Strawberries taste good don't they?" she asked not really expecting an answer. "But sometimes they need a little extra...flavouring."

Lisa lowered her hand and Jennie watched mesmerized as she ran the tip of the strawberry over her acing core. Then without another word Lisa pushed it inside of her pussy and she sucked in her breath at the cool feeling of the foreign object inside of her.

Lisa looked up at her, "How does that feel baby?"

Her eyes were closed, and her chest was rising rapidly, "Cool...di...different." Jennie sputtered.

Slowly she pulled it out then ran it up to her nub, brushing it across from side to side. Then she dipped back down and pushed it inside of her again.

"OH GOD!" she whined.

Once again Lisa pulled it out slowly, letting her feel every single part of it and then pushed it inside of her again. Slowly, she built a steady pace, in and out, in and out and soon Jennie was a wild woman on the bed. Her head was thrashing back and forth on the pillow as her hips were rising and falling in sync with the strokes of the strawberry. She had never felt anything like it, and she was ready to explode.

But just then it stopped and she opened her eyes and looked down at Lisa.

Looking at her, Lisa stuck her tongue out and licked her juices off of the strawberry that were glistening in the early morning rays of the sun that shone through the window.

"God Lisa...please don't stop," Jennie begged .

Lisa smirked at her and plopped the strawberry in her mouth. Lisa sat back and watched her while she happily chewed enjoying the mixed flavour of berry and her juices.

"Mmmm...see they taste much better this way."

Lisa picked up another one and immediately stuck it all the way inside of her making her hips rise once again off the bed. She drew it out and then stuck it back inside, she twirled it around by the

stem then pulled it out. Inspecting it to make sure it was sufficiently coated with her cum and lifted it up to her lips.

"Try it."

Lisa waited to see if she would. She didn't know if she was going too far or not, but when Jennie hungrily wrapped her lips around it and sucked it into her mouth Lisa groaned as pleasure swept through her watching Jennie taste herself.

"Does that taste good baby?"

When Jennie was done chewing, she had to admit that it did indeed taste good, and she wanted more. But she was a little embarrassed to say it so she just shook her head. She had in her wicked past fooled around with another girl, but that was just kissing and soft petting, she had never tasted another woman, and though she had tasted herself before it was a little weird to admit to someone else.

Lisa saw her hesitation and chuckled softly at her. "Don't be embarrassed baby. You and I are going to get to know one each other very, very intimately and I don't want you to ever be embarrassed to tell me anything."

Looking at Lisa, seeing the sincerity of her words, Jennie spoke, "Yes...I...want more."

Lisa breathed in deep, her control threatening to spill over the wall she built to hold it back,

'hold on Lisa, not yet.'

Lisa smiled at her and picked up another strawberry, "Ask and you shall receive."

Again, Lisa placed it inside of her and twirled the strawberry around coating it with her cum then she lifted.

When Jennie moved her head forward to take it Lisa shook her head "But not this time...sorry baby. This one's for me."

Then she plopped it in her mouth and savoured the flavour.

Jennie waited to take another strawberry, but she didn't, instead Lisa reached for the bowl of whipped cream and dipped her fingers in it. Lisa pulled them out of the bowl, and they were covered with cream, and she immediately slapped it on her pussy once again making her jump with the cool sensation and the not so gentle slap against her aching heat.

Seeing her early morning dessert, Lisa groaned loudly and dove in, licking the cream up and tasting the divine almost heavenly mixture of her and the cream. She latched on to her throbbing nub and sucked hard as her fingers began to probe her opening.

"Please Lisa...more" Jennie begged, and Lisa couldn't help but oblige as she plunged two fingers inside.

"Yes baby...YES!" Jennie wailed only to have her stop once again.

Lisa looked up at her and then without a word moved her body up and over. Putting both knees on the sides of her head, Lisa knelt in front of her face placing her cock at her mouth, "open your mouth."

Jennie did and Lisa thrust her cock inside desperate to feel her mouth close around. Jennie sucked hard as her tongue lapped at precum that was there. She moaned deep in her throat loving the taste.

Lisa control almost slipped she moved aggressively thrusting in and out of her mouth unable to stop as Jennie continued to suck and lick every inch that she could possibly take in.

Suddenly Lisa pulled away and reaching up ripped the scarves away. She moved lower and picked her up by her hips and roughly turned her over. Lifting her hips up in the air as Jennie got on her hands and knees, she positioned herself behind her. Leaning down Lisa whispered in her ear, "Remember what I told you baby? Remember when I told you I was going to take you from behind hard and fast?"

"Yes...please Lisa do it...fuck me!" She cried.

Lisa snarled and slammed inside of her in one shot to the hilt.

Jennie threw her head back at the force of her entry hissing with pain and pleasure. "YESSSSS Lisa PLEASE TAKE ME!"

Lisa was snarling like an animal as she fucked her just like she had been dreaming about for so long. Her pace was frenzied, and it only got faster and harder.

Jennie was screaming with pleasure and pain at the top of her lungs, feeling every single inch, loving the way her balls slapped against her, she pushed back wanting her to be brutal, wanting to be possessed.

"God baby you're so tight, so fucking hot! I'm going to cum inside of you baby, you want that, you want me to cum inside of you?" Lisa said as her hips rocked back and forth furiously pounding into her, giving her no quarter, no chance to deny it.

"YES Lisa PLEASE!"

With one final ruthless thrust Lisa came hard slamming into her and roaring her release. Jennie followed right behind as her balls slapped against her pussy one last time.

Jennie's body shuddered with the intense climax, and she continued to rock back as she rode out the wave of bliss that coursed through her body and soul.

Slowly Lisa came down and opened her eyes. She leaned forward and kissed her back lovingly. Jennie's couldn't hold herself up any longer and her arms and knees collapsed, and she fell face forward on the bed with Lisa right on top of her.

The room was silent except for the hushed sounds of breathy moans and sighs. Lisa rolled over taking Jennie with, so she was draped across her chest. Lisa closed her eyes and hugged her tightly, never wanting to let her go.

Jennie relaxed into Lisa embrace her heart so full of love for this woman that the words just naturally came out.

"I love you."

Lisa's eyes snapped open, and she gripped her chin turning her head. Jennie's eyes moist with tears, "Say it again." Lisa said.

"I love you Lalisa Manoban I have for a long time, and I think I always will." Jennie said with tears in her eyes.

Lisa smiled at her and kissed her hard on the lips, pulling back she smoothed her hair away from her moist forehead, "and I love you Elizabeth Jennie Ruby Kim and I always will."

Jennie laughed gleefully and kissed her again. "God, it feels good to finally say it aloud, to tell you."

When they parted Jennie laid her head on Lisa's chest. "By the way, you know I hate that name, right?"

Lisa chuckled, "Mino might have mentioned that."

Jennie snickered then sighed, "God Lisa it's so incredible, being with you it's like nothing I ever felt before, it's like...right." She looked up, "You know what I mean?"

Her deep brown eyes looked deeply back, "I do. It feels like it was always meant to be...you and me."

Jennie nodded smiling with her heart in her eyes; she leaned up and kissed Lisa on the lips her tongue licking her bottom lip. When she pulled back her eyes were darker, lustier and she smiled wickedly at Lisa.

Jennie sat up and placed her hands on Lisa's chest, she rubbed her wet lips against Lisa semi-hard cock and rocked back. "You know, I don't think I'll ever get enough of you." She huskily said as tingles of desires shot through her body from the friction her movements created.

Lisa smiled languidly at her and put her hands behind her head, letting her ride and enjoying the show. "I know the feeling."

Jennie started slowly rocking back and forth, rubbing the head of her cock against her engorged nub, Lisa watched with hooded eyes as she arched back, and her hips jerked forward. Her long hair

tickled her kneecaps as Jennie placed her left hand on her thigh to help steady her.

"You're so beautiful baby, so sexy. I love to watch you move, every motion is sleek and graceful, you get me so hot." Lisa was extremely excited watching her. The more she moved, the louder her moans grew, and the harder her cock grew. Lisa was desperate to be inside of her.

Jennie was so turned on by her words. Now she had the power, she was in control, and she wanted to tempt her beyond anything that she had ever known.

When Lisa grabs her hips urging to go faster, Jennie slapped her hands away. "It's my turn Lisa No touching."

Lisa smirked and once again put her hands behind her head to avoid the temptation to touch her.

Jennie smiled and continued her pace. The more excited she got, the wetter she got and the easier she slid across Lisa shaft. Not able to stand it anymore herself, she lifted herself up and grabbing her cock she sank down slowly, only taking in the head. She rotated her hips in a circle and Lisa squeezed her eyes shut at the erotic sensation she created.

Jennie lifted herself up and once again rubbed her head over her clit she moaned gutturally, and her hand came up and squeezed her breast.

"Lisa...you feel so good, so perfect..." her head rolled back as she sank on her again, this time taking in about half of her. Lisa opened her eyes and watched Jennie played with her breasts making her mouth water as she watched her pinch her nipple and rotate her hips.

"You're perfect baby...take me in more." She said as she continued to watch.

Jennie smiled and lifted herself up, leaning down she smirked. "Shhh...all in good time."

Jennie kissed her furrowed brow then sat back and she once again rotated her hips, once, twice, three times. "Ohhhh...."

Lisa scowled as she watched, she didn't know how much more of this teasing she could take before she just grabbed and impaled her on. Her teeth clenched together as Jennie lifted herself up and then sank back down taking only half of her inside.

Seeing the dark scowl, she chuckled huskily, "What's a matter lover, impatient?"

Lisa just growled at her, "You know what I want."

Jennie gave in because honestly she couldn't take it anymore either; she lifted herself up and then sank back down fully embedded deep inside of her.

"OHHHHH..." they said together.

"That's it baby, that's what I want."

Jennie sat still her eyes closed enjoying the way Lisa filled her. Jennie opened her eyes and see Lisa was watching her intently.

"Touch yourself," Lisa whispered.

She smiled and lifted her hands to her breasts she squeezed them and let her forefinger roll her nipples. "You like watching me touch myself?"

"Baby there is no greater turn on than watching the woman you love give herself pleasure." Lisa said as her eyes were glued to Jennie that were pulling on her nipples.

"mmmmm...I like touching myself for you it turns me on too." Jennie lifted her finger and stuck it in her mouth sucking on it when she pulled it out it was glistening with salvia. Then she reached down and rolled her nipple again wetting it and making it even harder.

"Mmmm, so sexy baby." Lisa was in heaven; this was even better than her nightly dream and she wanted more. "Touch your pussy

baby, make yourself cum."

Jennie leaned back once again resting her hand on Lisa's thigh for support as her other hand lifted to her mouth once again as she sucked on her finger. Then she leaned down and touched her clit, slowly rubbing it back and forth. "Lisa..." she whined as her eyes closed to the rapidly building pleasure that was making her whole body hum.

"Mmmm, make yourself cum baby." Lisa finally moved her hands away from her head and she now gripped the sheets. Her hips voluntarily rose as her finger moved faster over her clit and her hips began to rock with her motion.

Jennie moved faster and faster until she couldn't take it anymore and then she lifted herself up and slammed back down. She started a strong steady pace of up and down, then rotating her hips. Feeling every inch of her cock as she touched her inner walls.

Lisa unable to resist any more grabbed her by the hips and helped her move, "faster...ahh...yes...baby, harder!" Her eyes glued to Jennie beautiful bouncing breasts.

"Ohhh..."

She moved faster and faster, slamming down again and again. Lisa suddenly sat up and put her hand on her back Lisa arched her backwards and took a rosy hard nipple in her mouth suckling on it then tapping it with her tongue.

"OH GOD Lisa...I'm going to cum!" Jennie screamed as she violently pushed Lisa back down on the bed and rose up then slammed down hard cumming and screaming her name... "LISAAAAaaaa!"

Lisa didn't give her chance to recuperate or ride out her orgasm as she quickly flipped them, so Jennie was on her back, and Lisa plunged inside of her three more times ramming herself all the way in and cumming inside of her.

"JENNNNIE!"

Lisa kissed her face, her closed eyes, her neck. Lisa lovingly kissed

her everywhere her lips could reach. When she was satisfied, she rolled over on her back and closed her eyes breathing deeply and enjoying the spasms of her climax.

Jennie lay there panting heavily and sweat pouring out of her body, "God I'm so hot." She said.

'Tell me about it. Wait...hot?'

Lisa smiled as she got an idea. She stood up and grabbed her.

"Lisa! What are you doing?" she laughed.

"You're hot...I'm hot, there's only one option." Lisa walked into the bathroom and turned the shower on, so it was cool then placed her inside and stepped in behind her.

Jennie stood under the water and let it cascade over her fevered skin. "This feels wonderful."

Lisa grinned and picked up a bar of soap and then pulled Jennie back against her. Her soapy hands slowly massaged Jennie's breasts and nipples then moved up to her neck and shoulders massaging her gently.

"Mmm...so does that." She sighed.

"I love to touch you baby. Your skin is so soft and silky. It's like a fine oriental silk that I just want to drape all over my body," she purred in her ear.

Her hands wandered down to her belly massaging it and then dropped further to her thighs, squeezing them gently. Then she dipped lower to her wet core where Lisa slowly soaped up her lips her fingers gliding effortlessly over her wet pussy.

"And this, this is my heaven...this is my prize...this..." Lisa pushed two soapy fingers inside of her, "This is mine."

"Ohhh..." Jennie tilted her head back, and drew Lisa head down to hers, "Kiss me."

Their mouths met and their tongues explored each other's mouths as her finger slowly moved in and out of her. Lisa other hand played with her nipples, rolling them around between her forefinger and index finger, all the while Jennie was moaning and whining.

Lisa kissed her one last time on the cheek then moved up to her ear, "I love the little noises you make in the back of your throat, like a cat that's being petted. It gets me so hot."

"Mmmm...pet me more baby." She purred.

Lisa desperately wanted to be inside of her, but the day was still young, and they had already made love pretty fiercely twice so she wanted to take this one slow. She didn't want her to get swollen too fast.

Lisa took her fingers out, turning her around Lisa got down on her knees as Jennie leaned back against the tiled wall. Lisa lifted her leg and put it on her shoulder moving her head closer to her pussy. Cupping her hands she let them fill with water then she splashed it up on her pussy cleaning the soap off. Jennie jumped as the cool water hit her fevered flesh. "I'll pet you baby, just relax." Her tongue came out and licked her from the top to the bottom, "Ah yes..."

Slowly and gently she sucked on her nub and then tapped it lightly as her fingers once again pushed inside, then she moved lower and licked her opening.

Jennie ardently watched her. Lisa looked so sexy down there with her head between her legs pleasuring her. As she looked up her eye caught their reflection in the mirror. Her body shuddered with bliss at the erotic picture they made and she felt empowered.

"Lisa...fuck me with your tongue baby, please..." she whined as her hands gripped her head even more.

Lisa growled and stiffening her tongue she removed her fingers and plunged her tongue inside, fucking her fast.

"YES baby just like that don't stop!"

Lisa growled hungrily into her pussy as she continued to fuck her,

the vibration of her growl sending explosive shivers of heat ricocheting throughout her body and she tightened, squeezing her legs around her head.

"YES, I'm cumming baby...Lisaaaa!" Jennie threw her head back hitting the wall as she exploded in her mouth filling it with her juices. Lisa hummed, as she greedily drank every drop down.

After Lisa licked her clean, she put her foot back on the floor and stood up. She moved them under the showerhead and the cool water once again coursed down their hot bodies.

Jennie sighed, contentment filling every inch of her.

"Well, this has definitely been the best birthday I've ever had. I love you so much." She said as Lisa hugged her tighter kissing her head, "I love you to baby."

***

A few hours later, they lay in bed cuddled closely together each numb with the incredible climaxes that they experienced early in the day, each feeling lighthearted and free. Jennie's mind was going a mile a minute with thoughts of the present and their future.

"Lisa."

"mmm?"

"What are we going to tell Kathy? I mean do you think she'll understand?" she asked.

Lisa smiled, "She already knows. I talked to her last night."

"What did she say?"

"She scolded me because I hadn't told you that I loved you," she said, smiling at the memory.

Jennie looked up, propping her elbows on Lisa's chest and resting her head in her palms, "She did eh? Smart girl."

Lisa squeezed her ass, "Like you're one to talk. I didn't hear any words of love coming from you either you know." She teased.

Jennie blushed then looked away. "Well...it was so new and I didn't know how you felt, and it just felt more special keeping it to myself for a while."

Lisa keen eyes saw what she was really saying. "I know what you mean. I was afraid too."

Her eyes snapped, "Afraid..." she loosely chuckled, "What are you talking about afraid?" She didn't' know why she was embarrassed to admit it but she was.

Lisa just continued smirking at her and Jennie sighed. "Alright I was afraid that you wouldn't feel the same way, but that doesn't matter anymore does it?"

"No it doesn't."

Jennie laid her head back down and Lisa hugged her. Lisa picked up a lock of her hair and twirled it in her fingers, her own mind now pondering their future. Was it too soon to talk about it? She didn't want to scare her but she couldn't stop thinking about it.

"Jennie can I ask you a question?"

"Mmm," Jennie said as she idly stroked her chest.

"Do you have plans...you know after you graduate? Did you plan on going to college? I ask because I don't want you to change your plans because of me. I want you to do whatever you want to do, and if that means you going away somewhere..."

Jennie leaned up and looked at Lisa, "Lisa I haven't really made any plans, but I know that when I do, they will include you and Kathy. I love you two and I couldn't stand to be miles away from you for long."

"Well I can't say I'm not happy to hear that, but I want you to be sure baby. I don't want you settling for something less just because of us...it's your future, and you have to be sure."

"Lisa, I am sure, and besides it's not just my future, it's our future."

Jennie sat up sitting astride and leaning forward cradled her head in between her arms as she looked deeply into Lisa's eyes. "I'm going to marry you one day miss, whether you like it or not!"

Lisa smiled at her like an idiot then flipped her on her back and covered her. "I wouldn't have it any other way baby."

Epilogue

Jennie and Lisa spent the rest of the night moving from room to room and making love. They talked about their pasts and what their mutual hopes for the future were. After a vigorous romp in the kitchen, Jennie fell asleep draped across her lover on the kitchen floor. Lisa carried her up to their room where they slept peacefully entwined around each other.

The next day when David and Kathy came home, Mino and Riley also came over and they celebrated their good fortunes together as a family. That night they all went to the airport to see Riley off.

Jennie had been very sad to see her only living brother go and late that night. Encased in the warmth of their bedroom, Lisa consoled her the best way she could, by showing her how much she loved and appreciated her. She worshipped her body with everything that she had for a long, long time. She only stopped when there was a timid rap on their door. When she answered it, Kathy was standing there thumb in her mouth and tears running down her face. When she picked her up and asked her what was wrong, she said she thought the monsters had gotten them because of the loud shouts of pain she heard from Jennie.

Jennie was completely red faced with embarrassment, but Lisa just chuckled at both of them. Lisa laid Kathy in the bed between her and Jennie, and together they watched as she fell asleep.

After Riley left, things moved rather quickly for everyone. A few weeks later Jennie graduated from high school and then David returned home to England, with promises from Lisa and Jennie that they would visit him soon.

That summer Lisa, Jennie, Kathy and Mino all flew to England where they stayed for a month. During that time Jennie finally made some decisions as to what she wanted to do for the rest of her life, besides being Lisa's love slave.

She decided that she wanted to go to college. To Lisa's, and Kathy's, relief, she decided to attend UCS where she planned to study Child Psychology. It was perfect for her; they had an excellent psychology program plus Rosé and Alex were also attending UCS so she could still see her friends. Rosé planned on studying Forensic Science and Alex was majoring in business.

Alex did eventually come around in his feelings toward Lisa. And Jennie had the sneaking suspicion that they made some sort of pact. It was only after some guy tried to pick her up in the school bookstore as she was buying the textbooks for her classes that she realized it, because later that day she saw Alex talking to the same guy. As she snuck up to see what they were arguing about, she heard him say that she was unavailable and that he was watching out for her...all the time for his close personal friend that just so happened to be rich and powerful and Jennie's girlfriend.

Later that night, when she confronted Lisa about it, she fessed up. She'd told Alex if he looked after her at school that he could come over to swim in the pool and eat as much as he wanted to, anytime he wanted to without calling first. For over an hour they yelled and screamed at each other, Jennie accusing her of being too jealous and Lisa simply stating that she watched over what was her and that no college chump was going to try to get a piece of her woman.

That argument ended up with Jennie flat on her back on the desk legs spread wide as Lisa ruthlessly showed her the extent of her possession. She couldn't walk straight the next day so she scowled at her every chance she got only to be smirked at smugly.

Four years later, they all graduated with honours from UCS. Rosé and Alex both moved to LA, where Rosé got a job working for the Los Angeles County Medical Examiner's Office and Alex opened a consulting firm.

Jennie decided that she wanted to go for her master's degree, so she enrolled at UCLA and attended graduate school. It was a rough two years for everyone. During the week she stayed with Rosé in LA, then every weekend she drove home to Sunnydale to be with her family to spend every waking hour with Kathy and Lisa. Those weekend nights were some of the hottest and most erotic she ever

experienced, as she and Lisa expressed how much they missed each other during the week to each other. They went to bed at nine o'clock right after Kathy did and didn't come out till the next morning.

On Sunday night, she returned to LA sad and lonely and missing her family. Mino oftentimes came and visited her during the week, and there were also the occasional surprise visits from Lisa who said she couldn't stay away from her anymore. On those nights poor Rosé got no sleep as she was kept wide awake by the loud and boisterous noises the lovers made.

It was at UCLA that Jennie met and befriended Irene Morrison. She was a student in one of her classes and they quickly became friends. Jennie immediately liked Irene and she knew that she was perfect for someone who was close to Jennie's heart. So, Jennie kept the vow that she had made to herself, and on one weekend she brought Irene home with her.

The second that Mino and Irene saw each other, it was like an electric current that passed back and forth between the two of them. Lisa took great pleasure in teasing Mino about it since Mino had teased Lisa about her own electrical connection to Jennie. It wasn't long after that they began dating and they were now like peanut butter and jelly, neither one rarely without the other one.

Promises were kept and when Jennie received her master's degree two years later, she and Lisa got married at the mansion. It was a small affair with only their close friends and family. Even Riley flew back for the occasion, bringing along his new wife Sam, who was also in the army and stationed with him in Argentina.

When they returned home from their honeymoon two weeks later, Jennie and Irene opened The Offices of Kim and Morrison. Together, they worked to help as many children as they possibly could to have a better life. They started an after-school outreach program for kids that had nowhere to go; they offered them extra help with their studies, counselling for the more troubled kids, and they had a martial arts and boxing program, along with gymnastics and dance. Lisa and Mino volunteered two nights a week, teaching the kids martial arts and boxing. Each one enjoying the time they

spent with the kids.

Two years later when Jennie turned twenty-six, she was gifted with the second-best birthday she ever had when she discovered that she was pregnant.

Everyone was ecstatic, especially Lisa and Kathy. Leo Scott Manoban was born eight months later, and Lisa had been the epitome of fatherly pride as she looked on as Jennie breast-feed him for the first time. Lisa had tears of joy in her eyes as she watched. Kathy now the ripe old age of twelve, made the comment that it looked painful. Jennie shared a knowing laugh with Lisa. Then Jennie commented that it wasn't and one day she would find out for herself, which immediately shut Lisa up and put the darkest scowl Jennie had ever seen on her handsome face.

Little Kathy, who under the loving guidance of Lisa and Jennie, grew up to be a healthy responsible young woman. She was a straight A honour student and when she wasn't in school, she stayed at home with Jennie helping her look after Leo who was as much of a terror as Jennie or Kathy had ever been.

When Kathy turned sixteen Jennie practically had to kick her out of the house to go to a party one of her friends was throwing. Lisa had flipped out and said she was too young to be going to parties. When Jennie said that she was younger than that when she first went out, Lisa had stupidly said, that's my point! She had then kicked her out of the bedroom that night and spent the night alone miserable in her bedroom while Lisa did nothing but curse herself a fool in the library.

The next day she made it up to her with a weekend trip to Malibu for just the two of them and Jennie forgave her. It was hard not to considering what an exceptionally well-accomplished kiss ass Lisa was, which also resulted in baby number two and the arrival of little Joyce Owena Manoban nine months later.

When Kathy was seventeen, Jennie hired a babysitter to watch Leo and Joyce who were little terrors so Kathy would have no excuse not to go and hang out with her friends. Unfortunately for Jennie it was Lisa that opened the door when the new babysitter arrived and

what she saw made her scowl.

It was Timmy, a young sturdy good-looking boy who was being ogled at by Kathy who stood behind Lisa. After Kathy told hee that Timmy was the new babysitter, Lisa had immediately rushed to find Jennie, where they proceeded to argue for weeks on end about it. Saying that it wasn't right, and that she wasn't blind and could easily see the attraction between Kathy and Timmy, she argued that young lust only led to bad things.

Jennie had slinked up to her with a smile on her face to rival the Cheshire Cat and wrapped her arms around her neck and quickly reminded her that if it weren't for her own young lust, they never would have found each other. Lisa could do nothing but agree with her as she showed her how much her young lust still thrived for her.

Afterwards as they lay in their afterglow, they whispered words of love and devotion, passion and lust, family and forever, and of the forbidden fruit of young lust.

The End

Thx for loving this fic naka...see u in "wolf pack"

[image]

New story soon

Lisa is a lone wolf. Jennie is a princess of the pack.

Lisa G!P

[image]

New story

Plz stay tune for my next project.

"Coming Soon"

Description:

Lisa is a new photographer of small magazine in town she just moving to. Curiosity leads her to become entangled in a concealed past case. She never expecting to find herself embroiled in its dark secrets.

[image]

Coming Soon

Artist's Inspiration | JenLisa FF

Description:

Jennie is in need for a job to help support her and her sister, and when she is hired as an artist's personal assistant, Jennie gets more than her ever expected.

⚠🔞Lisa G!P 🔞⚠

Pairing: L/other, JL

New fluff

Description:

Just two people whose lives connect early on, and they keep meeting till they get it right.

"Lisa, will you marry me? Am I old enough yet?"

"No, Jennie, you're not. But ask me again when you get older."

⚠ Lisa G!P ⚠

Link in the comment

[image]

[New] short fic

Jennie, a young woman who has been through so much, had weathered many storms in her life. Yet, there was one memory that lingered, a memory of a night spent with her true love, a love that was not meant to be.

Then, one day, fate brought them face to face once again.

🔞⚠ Lisa G!P ⚠🔞

Link in the comment.